This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

Mosaics from India

Margaret Beahm Denning

Digitized by Google

Ind 2009.02.6

Harvard College Library

FROM THE BEQUEST OF

HENRY WARE WALES, M.D.

Class of 1838

FOR BOOKS OF INTEREST TO THE
SANSKRIT DEPARTMENT

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

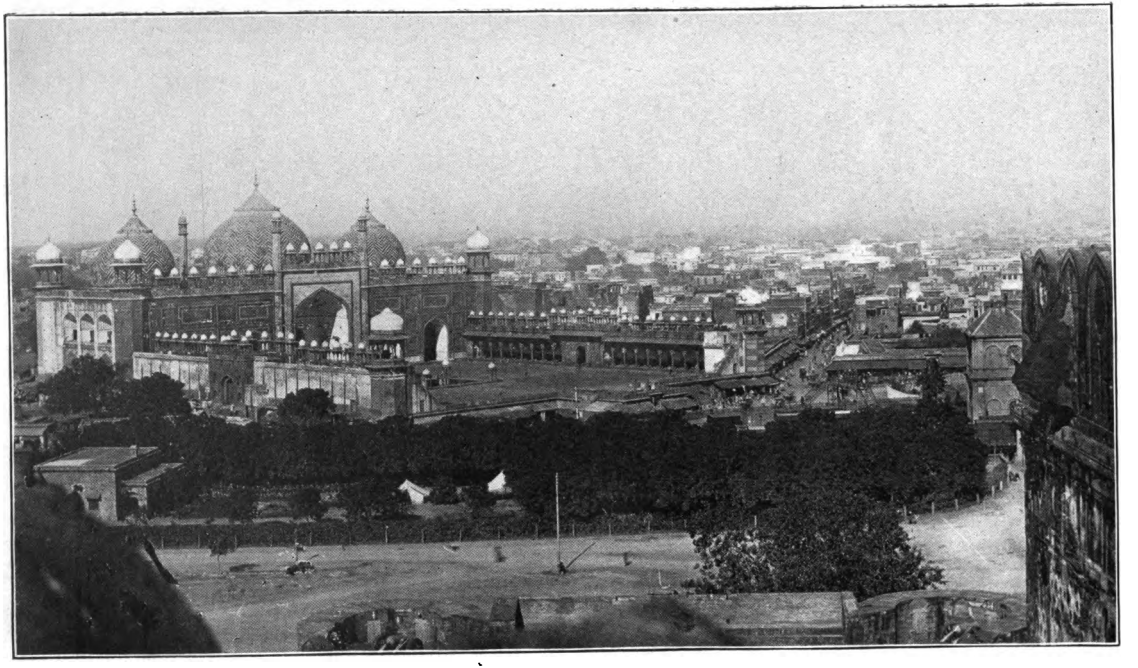
Digitized by Google

MOSAICS FROM INDIA

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



VIEW OF AGRA CITY.—See Page 221.

Digitized by Google

Mosaics From India

TALKS ABOUT INDIA, ITS PEOPLES, RELIGIONS AND CUSTOMS

BY

MARGARET BOEHME DENNING

MUZAFFARPUR, INDIA

Fleming H. Revell Company

Chicago ; New York ; Toronto

MCMII

Digitized by Google

Ind 2009.02.6

HARVARD COLLEGE
FEB 5 1920
LIBRARY
Wales fund

COPYRIGHT, 1902,
BY FLEMING H.
REVELL COMPANY

March

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS.

		PAGE
	Introduction	11
I.	Bombay	13
II.	Government of India	26
III.	Missions in India	43
IV.	City of the Peshwas	63
V.	Child-widows and Their Champion	73
VI.	Stories of Little Girls	92
VII.	Up-country, or "Mofussil"	108
VIII.	Behind the Purdah	129
IX.	The Iron Bracelet	146
X.	Low-caste Women	159
XI.	Famine	167
XII.	Weddings	180
XIII.	The Hill Country	195
XIV.	Oriental Palaces and Tombs	208
XV.	About Caste	222
XVI.	Peculiarities of Caste	243
XVII.	Education	259
XVIII.	Gods and Religions of the Land	273
XIX.	Pilgrimages and Holy Places	283

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

		PAGE
1.	View of "Agra City"	*Frontispiece*
2.	A Group of Christians	45
3.	A Bible Cart in India	55
4.	Hardwicke Christian Boys' School, Narsinghpur	57
5.	Class of Boys Studying English in Hardwicke Christian Boys' School	62
6.	American Missionary in Marathi Costume	65
7.	Group of High-caste Youths, Poona, India	65
8.	Portrait of Ramabai	85
9.	Group of Child Widows	85
10.	Mission Bungalow, with Thatched Roof, Narsinghpur, India	110
11.	Indian Buffaloes Bathing	113
12.	A Hindu Street Scene	113
13.	Marble Rocks of Narbudda River, near Jabalpur	122
14.	A Group of Common People	159
15.	A Group of Sweepers	164
16.	A Famine Subject	167
17.	Group of Famine Children and Nine Women Who Cared for Them in the Government Poor House	174
18.	Rescued Famine Children at Dinner	179
19.	Group of Todas and Their Dwelling	202
20.	Sacrificing a Buffalo at a Toda Funeral	204
21.	The Exquisite Marble Fret-work Screen inside the Tāj Mahal, Agra	208
22.	The Methodist Theological Seminary, Barielly	213
23.	The Jessamine Bower in the Palace at Agra	216
24.	The Fort Agra	219
25.	Christian Girls' School, Jubbulpore	265
26.	Stone Hog at Barmön on the Narbudda River	284
27.	Figure of Sacred Bull at the Temple of Parwati, Poona	284
28.	Burning the Dead	290

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

INTRODUCTION

Wander with me through Hindustan—the land of varied peoples, tongues and climes, of romance and of poetry, and yet the land of sorrow, poverty and false gods.

We shall wish to see old temples, wherein, since long ago, these peoples have searched after God, drifting into strange, idolatrous worship, not finding the Living One. Here and there we shall listen to talks by the wayside, in out-caste huts or in curtained zenanas. We shall go out into the beautiful country and, standing beside Mother Ganges, see the trees so rich in blossom, delight our eyes with the beauty of old palaces and visit tombs and mosques. Yet, most of all, we shall hope to get near the people at their vocations, in their ceremonies and in their worship—near to the heart of India. And, as we see and know these people better, knowledge will inspire pity, then sympathy, sometimes admiration, and all will give place to *love*. They will be no longer barbarians, but simply strayed brothers of our common family. And, having learned to love them, we must long to bring them home to the family reunion, for "Love never faileth."

Some chapters of this book have appeared in "The Chautauquan," "The Missionary Review of the World" and other publications, and I am greatly indebted to their publishers for permission to reprint. Monier Williams' book on "Brahminism" has been consulted on points regarding caste and customs.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER I.

BOMBAY.

From the sea, Bombay is imposing. The towers and fine buildings near Apollo Bunder, or Prince's Dock, look fair in the Indian sunshine, and a closer view of the part known as "The Fort" confirms the impression. The city, almost free from smoke, retains in its buildings the beauty of variously tinted stone. The Esplanade is a beautiful sight, indeed, with its fine Elphinstone College and the many other stone buildings along its length. Malabar Hill, also, with its trees, gardens and elegant residences, is an enticing part of the city. "Victoria Terminus" is the finest railway station in the world. Everything in this European Bombay conveys the idea of space, verdure, comfort and wealth. Fine equipages roll along the wide streets in the late afternoons and in the golden evenings of a climate of perpetual summer; beautiful Parsee ladies in dainty, silken, flowing attire, flit by among English beauties, while now and then a darker-hued but attractive Marathi face may be seen. Native gentlemen in rich and becoming headgear known as a "pugri," drive everywhere, and the Parsee's peculiar "stove-pipe," without a brim, is omnipresent. On the streets a throng, more truly cosmopolitan than is found anywhere else, sweeps along or

Digitized by Google

turns aside to enjoy the cool of the evening in little parks or along the sea-beach.

All this brightness, movement and beauty, belong to *European* Bombay, although many of the wealthy and high-caste people share in it also. The native city is very different. Here are the narrow, badly drained streets, the crowded tenements, where the plague finds such congenial quarters, and the numberless small shops which delight the foreigner and reward the curio-seeking tourist. In this part of Bombay the habits and customs of the people may be studied, as life is studied in crowded Naples. However, here in the oriental city one notes a remarkable absence of the feminine element of the city's life. The few women seen belong to the lower classes, with the exception of the favored high-born Marathi woman, who need not go veiled, or the fair Parsee lady, who rivals her Western sister in freedom as well as in beauty.

All sorts of occupations are carried on out-of-doors—not only the trades and handicrafts, but household duties as well. Here are fruits or grain being laid out in the sun to dry, a baby enjoying its bath on a door-step, rice in process of cleaning, a barber busy on the curbstone, a woman scouring brass cooking-pots—and all in the teeming streets of Bombay. The same unconcern regarding outward appearances will be found all over India. As the coolies work on the roads, pounding in sandstone and concrete, they sing in concert, or, in responsive couplets, keep time with their *doolmuts*, or pounders. Processions of all sorts pass through the streets, singing wedding ditties,

Digitized by Google

funeral dirges or religious chants. Wedding dinners are served on the road in front of the bride's or bridegroom's house, and the guests seem to enjoy the feast all the more for being the cynosures of hungry eyes. Almost hide-bound by caste-rules and observances, the people of India are nevertheless free as air from the restrictions of our so-called proprieties.

This out-door life is, in certain phases, very attractive and delightful, suited to the people and to the climate and fascinating to the foreigner from colder lands; but it is also pathetic in many ways. Its saddest feature is the dearth of real family-life, the absence of the home. Men may sit in groups and smoke or dally over their sherbet, but no family group is ever visible, except among the Parsees or resident foreigners. Even the Marathi woman, though not hid away as are most high-caste women, is never seen with her husband and sons. Traveling about India one misses more and more the shut-in millions—the lonely women for whom the marvelous Eastern moonlight means but a few rays in a dingy, walled back-yard, and for whom the flowers and groves bloom and blossom in vain.

The great diversity of vehicles and animals in Bombay is very interesting. Almost all sorts of English carriages are used. Then there is the huge bullock-coach, holding eight or ten, drawn by the fine, humped Indian ox, and the queer little top-heavy *ekka,* meant for one only, as its name signifies, but often fairly bulging with its human freight. Among the fine English turnouts, the country carts, the bullock-

Digitized by Google

coaches and the horsecars, may be seen also the ungainly black buffaloes, dragging heavy drays slowly along, and all combining to make a medley of traffic unknown in any but an Indian city. The horses belonging to the streetcars usually wear white sun-hats tied down under their chins in a most comical, grandmotherly style.

Besides these sights there are the Chinese shops, the queer little places where one can buy curios; the wonderful Crawford Market with its unrivaled fruit, the mango, and an almost endless variety of other fruits. But to one who loves his race, the most interesting, yet most pathetic, of all this city's varied spectacles is her teeming millions. The newcomer is always shocked by the prevalent semi and total nakedness seen here. Even those not limited by poverty to a narrow loin-cloth, by preference often wear nothing else. This custom, universal among the lower classes, extends to the higher orders when sitting in the doorways of their homes or in their shops.

Altogether, Bombay belongs to a strange new world, yet an old, old, slowly changing world—the Orient, which fascinates while it repels.

THE SOROSIS CLUB AT BOMBAY.

Upon invitation of Dr. Emma Ryder, the President of the Sorosis Club of Bombay, I drove one afternoon down the Esplanade to the Girls' School, where an "at home" of the club was given in honor of the Governor's wife.

Digitized by Google

At the gate of the compound, or yard, my husband left me and I ascended the stairs alone, for gentlemen were not permitted on the second landing even, as many ladies had accepted the invitation of Dr. Ryder on condition and promise that gentlemen were not to be present.

It was a brilliant scene. The room was large and airy, with many doors and windows opening upon verandas on either side. At one end of the room, partly hidden by curtains and a screen, was a table spread with dainties new and rare to Western eyes. Fine palms in huge pots adorned the archways, and tasteful articles of Indian bric-à-brac were used in profusion.

The company could well be called "exclusive," for we were admitted behind the Mohammedan *purdahs* and enjoyed associations which a few years ago would have been denied to all. There were present representatives of at least six nationalities and of almost as many religions. A few of the company were American and English ladies, some Mohammedan and Hindu, but the larger number were Parsees. This was owing in part to the proximity of the Parsee Girls' School and also to the fact that some of the young ladies from the school were to take part in the program.

A more richly dressed assembly it would be difficult to find; yet not a single specimen of the so-called "full-dress" costume was there. The Hindu women were attired in a tasteful and costly manner, but their garments were of sober hues. Their head-ornaments of

Digitized by Google

gold were massive and beautiful, the hair being drawn smoothly back into a knot and fastened by these gold medallions. The Mohammedans wore rich costumes and fine ornaments and were distinguished by embroidered turbans; but the brilliancy and light of the company came from the soft and shimmering silks of the Parsee ladies—white, rich red, peach, pink, blue, pale yellows and lovely tints of light green blending and mingling in kaleidoscopic fashion. These graceful garments were trimmed with gold and silver braid, rich lace and bands of embroidered ribbon. The necklaces, bracelets, and, in the case of the Hindus, the nose-jewels and anklets, made a soft, tinkling noise as their owners moved about. It was an Arabian Nights scene. Yet this very tinkling of the wristlets and anklets sounded to me like the noise of chains, for, as I looked into the beautiful faces, I thought that the shadows of oppression were there.

But what is the Sorosis and what are its objects? It is, in brief, the daughter of the New York Sorosis, a club which was organized for purely literary purposes and aimed at a confederation of many similar clubs.

When Dr. Ryder arrived in India she was wonderfully impressed with the narrowness of the lives lived by even the most favored of India's women. Family weddings, births and deaths—and for the rest the merest trifles—made up the sum total of their experience. History, deeds of heroism and the vivid life of to-day seemed scarcely to reach them at all. Mrs. Ryder felt it her plain duty to open the world in some

Digitized by Google

way to these women. The first step in this direction was the insertion of a notice in the Bombay papers to the effect that, on a certain Saturday afternoon, she would be glad to receive all women who would come, with a view to forming a woman's club.

Great apprehension was felt by Mrs. Ryder's friends as to the outcome of this experiment. They were sure it would either end in failure or in the gathering together of a very doubtful company. However, the day arrived, and with it forty women of various creeds and nationalities. A club was formed and christened "Sorosis."

A reading-room forms the center of attraction for the club. To this women may come who never before ventured anywhere alone. To many it is the only thing of interest outside of their homes. Here are choice books and magazines and here these women come to discuss all sorts of topics, or to fraternize in a manner previously unheard of in this land of caste and social barriers.

Here the Hindu meets the Parsee and both meet the Christian, whether European, Eurasian, or native. Strangest of all, the seclusive, shrouded Mussulmani steals in, and, unveiling, takes her share in the new comradeship.

There are regular fortnightly meetings and an occasional "at home," or tea. At every regular meeting a twenty-minute lecture is given on the life of some worthily distinguished woman. Elizabeth Fry, Miss Carpenter, Frances Willard and others have, in this way, been infusing new aspirations and thoughts into

Digitized by Google

the minds and hearts of these Eastern sisters. Essays are read and music is rendered in Persian, English, Marathi and Arabic. As will be seen, some of these women know something of certain branches of education, but their lives are shut in and narrow. The club gives them some opportunity to exercise their mental muscle and to belong, in a measure, to the age in which they live.

There is no missionary work connected with this movement; but, although we may depreciate the presence of an idol on the piano, even though it be merely for ornament, and may wish there were a more distinctly Christian atmosphere in these gatherings, still a good work is being done in the opening of hitherto closed doors and in the burning away of caste-barriers in the fires of social life and kindred interests.

Over the door of the room is the motto sent to Dr. Ryder by the President of the New York Sorosis: *"Tell them the world was made for women also."* Strange new doctrine for India! Yet in the gatherings in the mission schools for girls all over the empire, in the passage of the "Bill of Consent" and in Pandita Ramabai's School for Widows in Poona—in *all* these we see the dawn of hope for India's womanhood.

Some day meetings such as I have described will not be so rare. Pandita's school will not be the "lone star" of hope for twenty-one million widows. Some day this beautiful Eastern world will indeed be made for women also, for some day our God will rule in this land of the palm and citron, and King Emmanuel will

Digitized by Google

be the Lord. Then infants will not be married, nor child-widows cry by reason of their bitter bondage. Then will the Sun of Righteousness arise with healing in His wings, and there shall be "no more curse" upon the women and the homes of India.

"TOWERS OF SILENCE."

One of the most weirdly interesting scenes in Bombay is the place where the Parsees dispose of their dead, known as the "Towers of Silence." One day, in company with an American lady, we drove over beautiful Malabar Hill to this strange spot. As it stands on an eminence overlooking the sea, protected on the landward side by a high stone wall, we could see nothing of the towers as we approached. We alighted at the gate and were admitted by the dignified gatekeeper. Another Parsee showed us over the grounds, which are carefully laid out in gravel walks and dotted with various kinds of palms, the variegated crotons, often called "the flowers of India," and with many flowering trees. From these trees and plants each visitor received a bouquet on leaving.

Here and there are several temples dedicated to fire-worship, the religion of the Parsees. Five priests keep the fire burning continuously in these temples, and, since the first Persians landed in Bombay, over two hundred years ago, this fire has never been allowed to go out. The trees, parterres of flowers, the neat walks and even the fire-temples were pleasant to the eye—but these were not what we had come to see.

Digitized by Google

All these are merely the setting for the five round towers of white masonry, scattered here and there among the shrubbery. These are the "Towers of Silence," where the Parsees expose their dead to be devoured by vultures.

Those grewsome objects perched in an unbroken row upon the edges of every parapet are motionless birds awaiting their ghoulish feast. One of these solid white towers, with its fringe of black vultures standing out in relief against the sky, is a sickening sight; for the disposal of the dead by exposing their bodies to these loathsome birds is certainly the most revolting of all the methods of disposing of lifeless clay.

The towers are open to the sky above, but all the interior is hidden from sight by outer walls, rising fourteen feet above the stone platform on which the dead are laid. They are perhaps thirty feet high and ninety feet in diameter.

Although no one has ever seen the interior except the builders and those who carry the dead to the towers, there is a large model about three feet in diameter, kept locked in a wooden box near the gate, which the guide will exhibit and explain, and by means of which a fair idea of the whole structure may be obtained. This model, and one exactly similar, which was sent to the Paris Exposition, are the only ones ever made, the old Parsee told us. We have since been informed that miniature ones are for sale in Bombay. However this may be, we have never been able to secure one as a curio.

The plan of a tower is approximately this: a cir-

Digitized by Google

cular platform, fourteen feet below the topmost level of the outer wall, and, as already described, open to sun, wind and rain, receives the bodies. This platform is divided into three concentric rings of stone receptacles. The outer row is for men, the middle for women and the inner for children. In the center, occupying the greater part of the tower, is the well.

These receptacles are connected by gutters, cut between them, and the rains wash away all uncleanness from the bodies, which have been stripped of flesh by the birds of prey. This water passes into the great well, where it percolates through the bleaching bones of thousands of Parsees, and from thence is carried off through huge underground drains. There are four of these drains, and at the entrance of every one is a large box of charcoal intended to purify the water before it is discharged into the earth. There are, perhaps, methods of renewing this charcoal when it becomes clogged with impurities. On a level with the platform is a door reached from the ground by an inclined plane of stonework, by which the bearers enter with the body of the dead. Having placed their burden in one of the receptacles, they hasten out, when, from a position in the garden, the black fringe will be seen to disappear from the top of the tower. The vultures are feeding! Perchance on the body of a sweet, beautiful child, but lately held in a mother's loving embrace. No one may witness them at their revolting feast; but presently they return, satisfied, to the parapet or to a perch among the trees. Two weeks after the burial the bearers return and, with a pair of long tongs, throw the bones

Digitized by Google

into the great well. The clothes in which the dead were wrapped, as well as those worn by the bearers, are all left inside the garden in a small stone house, where they are burned. Every time the bearers carry a body to the towers they are provided with new, pure, white garments by the friends of the deceased. These bearers, who prepare the dead and carry them into the regions of silence, must live separate from the Parsee community, as they are considered unclean, and, in order to induce anyone to embrace this vocation, the pay for the service is placed very high.

The reason given for this strange disposition of the dead is this: to hasten the return of the body to the original elements worshiped by the Parsees—earth, air, water and fire—and to maintain the greatest possible purity.

One wonders, however, at this explanation, for the Hindu method of burning-ghäts is a far speedier, simpler and less repulsive method of accomplishing the same result.

There are many strange stories and traditions connected with these towers. It is even said that if by mistake a living man should be carried there in a faint or swoon, and should reach the interior, he would not be carried back, even were he to revive, but the door would be closed and the unfortunate left to his fate. Whether this is true or not, it is scarcely more tragic than the sight, often witnessed in Bombay, of a funeral procession being met on the way to the gardens by a flock of hungry vultures which have been waiting some days for a meal.

Digitized by Google

No one is allowed within this enclosure except a Parsee—so the sign board said. But, like many other rules, this was made null and void by the jingle of a little silver. The other rule, which prohibits anyone but a bearer of the dead from approaching within thirty feet of a tower, was, however, rigidly enforced.

The masonry of the towers is massive. The first one was built two hundred years ago, when the Parsees first came to Bombay. This oldest one is only used at present by the Modi family of Bombay. The last one of the five was erected forty-five years ago. There is a sixth tower, a square one, standing by itself in the garden, where rest the bones of the criminals of the Parsee community.

We took the flowers from the old Parsee as a souvenir of our visit, and turned from the beautiful grounds and white towers with their ornaments of living bronze. As we drove along the shores of the back bay toward home, we mused thankfully on our Christian burial rite, and Longfellow's beautiful couplet came to mind—

> Lay him who loved Mother Nature,
> Softly to sleep on her breast.

And the scenes in "Sweet Auburn," across the seas, in all their naturalness and beauty, seemed a fitting foil to this spectacle of mystery in the cemetery of the fire-worshipers of Bombay.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER II.

THE GOVERNMENT OF INDIA.

India is ruled by the British. King Edward VII., sitting upon his throne in London, is the Mähäräjäh of the Land of the Vedas, and the Anglo-Saxon mind has greatly changed the complexion and modified the thought of that oriental country.

The people of India are not one, but many peoples. The three hundred million inhabitants of that sunny land include representatives of several races of men, whose complexions range from pure white, through golden brown to black, with mental culture of all grades, from that slightly above the animal to the learned doctors of philosophy or of law. The Maratha and the Madrasi, the Parsee and the Panjabi, the Bengali and the Bhil, the Gond and the Gurkha, are samples of the variety of types represented. Besides, there are the foreigners; some of them temporary sojourners, others who have permanently settled in the land. Passing through the streets of Bombay or Calcutta one meets with almost every nationality that the sun shines upon. The Englishman, of course, is very prominent. Every other nation of Europe is represented. The American is there, too, and the Japanese, the Arab, the African, West Indian, Chinaman, and even the Fiji islanders. But the masses of people

Digitized by Google

met with are East Indians, or natives of the land, who differ as widely one from another as the foreigners themselves.

Another element in this population is the Eurasian —a mixture of European and Asiatic blood, representing every degree of intermingling, from almost pure English to the almost pure native. This class numbers a hundred thousand souls. They almost invariably adopt the customs of the Europeans and many of them are highly cultured and refined.

The religions of India separate its people still more widely than race characteristics. Some worship idols, back of which are all sorts of imaginary spirits, good and evil—mostly the latter; others worship themselves, or one another. Some worship the devil outright, while others lift up their hands and hearts in adoration of the true God who made the heavens and the earth. Over this mixed multitude the British flag waves and the British Räj (Government) is supreme.

The early history of India is little known. The Hindu despises history. Not one in a hundred knows the date of his birth or of the birth of his child. The origin of the human race or of the Hindu people, or the date of his sacred books, is as far back as the strength of his imagination will carry it. In the record of national events fiction plays a larger part than fact. But from the Aryan invasion, about 1500 B. C., India has seen the rise and fall of many governments. The Aryans conquered the aboriginal tribes, but they themselves became divided into petty kingdoms. Sometimes one prince stronger than the rest would prevail

Digitized by Google

over his neighbors and add their territory to his own; but after his death his successors would lose the advantage that he had gained.

About the eleventh century of our era the Mohammedans gained a footing in the Punjab. They were engaged in many wars, and the rule that they established was alternately strong and weak, the extent of their territory varying with the power of their chief ruler. In the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries the Mohammedan authority reached its climax in the Mogul Dynasty. The Taj Mahal and the forts at Agra and Delhi are monuments to the splendor of that Mogul age.

When the English first went to India, in the sixteenth century, their only motive was commercial. They had seen the ships of the Portuguese and the Dutch return from the East laden with spices, ivory, pearl and other rich treasures, and they, too, wished to share in this trade. Several English merchants ventured out, each on his own responsibility. But a six-months' voyage around the Cape of Good Hope, with a return journey of equal length, made, too, in boats much less able to weather the storms of the sea than the huge vessels of the present day, rendered individual enterprize hazardous. The trading companies of Portugal and Holland were under the patronage of their governments. At that time it was the popular idea that the sovereign should be the patron of the trades of his subjects. There had been an effort for several years in England to form a company for trading in the East Indias, but the uncertainty of its being

Digitized by Google

profitable made capitalists hesitate. Finally a company was organized to which, in the year 1600, a royal charter was granted by Queen Elizabeth. This is popularly known as the East India Company and was given the monopoly of the English trade beyond the Cape of Good Hope and the Straits of Magellan.

At first this company made voyages to India, taking goods and money from England and exchanging them for commodities saleable in the homeland. As their business increased they began to acquire grants of land in India and to construct factories. Since these properties must be protected, a police force was added, then a standing army. At that time there were many petty kingdoms in India and many chiefs who were frequently at war with one another. The British, with their wealth and their standing army, constituted a sort of neutral power. It often happened that a native prince who was being overpowered in war would appeal to the Company for aid, and in return would grant it concessions of land and special trading privileges in his territory. As these territorial possessions and the influence of the company increased it gradually became a power to be reckoned with in the political affairs of India. One kingdom after another fell into its hands until the power of the company became the greatest in India. The East India Company, being a private enterprise, the government received no share in its profits, although large loans were often made by it to Parliament in cases of necessity. It was of the nature of a limited trust company, dependent upon Parliament for its authority.

Digitized by Google

Its charter was modified from time to time, to suit new conditions, and the legislation of Parliament concerning it was adapted to its growth until it finally became a sort of provincial government for India.

This was the state of things when the great Indian Mutiny occurred in 1857. After the mutiny, in the year 1858, the English government assumed direct control of British India. Queen Victoria added to her title the phrase, "Empress of India," and the British East India Company ceased to exist.

At the present time nearly all India is under the British crown, the only exceptions being a small possession still retained by the French in the south, a little strip on the west coast belonging to Portugal, and three native states—Nepal, Sikkim and Bhutan—which are independent.

British rule is of two kinds: 1 Direct. 2 Protectorate over native states. There are still many states that are under the supervision of the British, but whose territory has not yet come into their actual possession. These states are allowed a measure of independence and are permitted to govern themselves under prescribed limitations. In all cases their princes and chiefs are bound by treaty engagements acknowledging British supremacy and surrendering all right to make war or peace, to open diplomatic relations with neighbors or foreigners, to maintain armies above a certain strength, or to offer hospitality to Europeans other than those agreeable to the Governor General. In all cases the treaties give power to the British to depose the native ruler in case of mismanagement. At

Digitized by Google

the court of each important prince lives a British Resident appointed by the Governor General, whose approval must be given to all the laws enacted by the native prince or his council before they can go into effect.

About one-fourth of British India is included in these native protected domains. A hundred or more of them are large enough to be called states, but many more are mere chieftainships. The most important is Hyderabad, in the south central part of India, which includes a population of ten million, over against others which number but a few thousand each. The other three-fourths of the country is ruled by the English directly.

The King of England is the ultimate authority in British India. He appoints a Secretary of State for India, who is the practical head of affairs, is a member of the King's Cabinet by virtue of his office and resides in England. He is assisted by a council of from ten to fifteen members, appointed by himself from among distinguished persons who have lived in India and are acquainted with the country. The members of this council live in England and constitute a sort of advisory committee without ultimate authority. To the Secretary and this council of his appointing is intrusted the conduct of all the business transacted in the United Kingdom in relation to the government of India. The House of Commons has too much to do in other matters to occupy its time and attention in the minutiæ of the Indian government. Hence it entrusts to the Secretary, assisted by his advisers,

Digitized by Google

all affairs pertaining to the Eastern Empire. The House frequently discusses the actions of the Secretary of State for India, and expresses its approval or disapproval, but seldom interferes directly.

In India the executive authority is vested in a Governor General, popularly known as Viceroy. He is appointed by the King, but is under the direction of the Secretary of State for India. He is assisted by an Executive Council, consisting of six ordinary members appointed by the crown, and from six to twelve additional members appointed by the Governor General. The commander-in-chief of the army in India is also a member of this council. The various departments of state, as finance, public works, home affairs, military works, are each presided over by an ordinary member, and the secretaries of each department look to him for orders. The portfolio of Foreign Affairs is usually held by the Governor General himself, with the aid of the secretaries and attaches of the Foreign Office. The Governor General, in council, under the sanction of the Secretary of State for India, has power to make laws for all British India. For political purposes the territory is divided into provinces, with a chief executive officer for each. Two of these provinces, Bombay and Madras, are called presidencies, because they were formerly governed by a president and council. Their chief executives are called governors, and are appointed by the Crown. The heads of the other provinces are called either Lieutenant-governors or Chief Commissioners, and are appointed by the Governor General. The Governors of Bombay and

Digitized by Google

Madras are assisted by executive and legislative councils. The Lieutenant-Governor of Bengal has a legislative council. These provincial governments are related to the central government of India, as the several states in America are related to the government at Washington, though the monarchical idea that prevails among the British makes the form of government very different.

Each province is divided into districts, or counties. These vary in size, and their boundaries are frequently determined by rivers, hills, mountain ranges or other landmarks. The district is really the fundamental unit of administration. Its chief officer is called "collector" or "deputy commissioner." The collector is a magistrate and has a wide scope of magisterial power, differing in the various provinces. He is also the chief land-revenue officer of the district. He is usually called by the natives *Bara Sahib* (big master) or some similar title, and to those not knowing from whence his power comes he seems a little king in his own territory. Viewed from the standpoint of the central government of the province, however, he is simply an executive officer under very minute regulations. He has a number of assistants, usually natives, whose number varies according to the size and importance of the district. Some are magistrates with powers in civil or criminal cases; others are revenue officers who, in the north, are called *tahsildars,* a *tahsil* meaning "A place of collecting." There are also "assistant," or *"naib tahsildars."* These again have assistants, as revenue inspectors, patwäris, and the like.

Digitized by Google

Several districts are grouped together in a "division," and each division has its commissioner. This officer ranks between the district officer and the chief commissioner, and is a very important factor in the government.

In the judicial department also the system is complete. Each of the provinces of Bombay, Bengal, Madras and Northwest Provinces has a High Court. In the other provinces one or more judicial commissioners are the highest judicial authority. There are also civil and criminal courts descending to that of the *munsif*, or squire.

In the constabulary each district has its district superintendent of police, who has under him inspectors, sub-inspectors, constables and patrolmen. Each province has an inspector-general of police, who is at the head of the provincial force.

A system somewhat similar prevails in the medical and educational departments. Each district is supplied with one or more civil surgeons and inspectors of education. These again are under the direction of their provincial officers. Besides these are the postal, excise, engineering, forest and other departments, each graded to suit its own requirements, and with each officer's authority and duties specifically marked out.

The great majority of the higher officers of government are Englishmen. The civil service (including such officers as collectors, or deputy commissioners, who may rise to be commissioners, chief commissioners, lieutenant-governors and the like) is now entered by competitive examinations. A yearly exam-

Digitized by Google

ination is held in England. The name of each candidate is presented to a special committee. If, after careful investigation, his health, moral character and probable fitness are approved, he is permitted to sit for examination. The list of subjects upon which he may be examined is a long one, some compulsory and some optional, and opposite each subject is the number of possible marks allowed to each. The candidates receiving the greatest number of marks are chosen to the Indian Civil Service in numbers proportional to the requirements of the service for the year. These examinations are now open to a limited number of native gentlemen, also, who go to England to prepare for it. After the successful candidates have received their appointments they still have annual examinations for several years on law, vernacular language and the like.

Candidates for other departments of the government service must pass examinations in their several departments, though less severe than those for the civil service.

The British endeavor to give the people of India a share in their own government; thus, as just mentioned, a limited number of native gentlemen is permitted to compete for the civil service. Some of them become "additional" members of the Governor General's council; some judges in the High Courts; others deputy postmasters general, deputy inspectors of education, subordinate judges, while hundreds of the minor offices are open to them. In most places the Municipal Council (Board of Aldermen) is almost

Digitized by Google

wholly composed of native gentlemen, some appointed by the Collector, and the rest elected by qualified voters of the community. They have power to act upon measures presented to them by the district officer and also to enact laws, subject to his approval.

To govern India is not an easy task. There are local conditions that must be taken into account. Many of the old customs of the Hindus and Mohammedans that have come down from ancient time must be respected so far as is consistent with good, stable, moral government. The English endeavor to accommodate themselves to these conditions. The laws of marriage, of inheritance, of adoption, of partition of property, that have obtained for many centuries, remain to-day with but little change. There is also the great system of caste among the Hindus. Each caste has its own rules in regard to eating and drinking, marriage, and the observance of religious rites, with its own committee, or *Panchäyat,* in every village or ward of a city. The *Panchäyat* sits in judgment upon its members on all points pertaining to caste-rules and on many points of moral conduct. Usually the punishments decreed for disobedience to caste-rules are recognized and enforced by the government, unless the culprit wishes to forsake his caste completely, in which case he is at liberty to do so.

The great variety of religions in India also makes the problem of government difficult. The many Hindu religions all have some things in common, but many divergences. Kali worship prevails in one place; Mahä Dev in another; Ganpati in a third. The Jains

Digitized by Google

have a modified Buddhism, and they, too, are divided into sects. The various reform movements—as Arya Samäj, Brahmo Samäj, Prathna Samäj—differ greatly. The Mohammedan sects worship God according to the teachings of the Arabian prophet, despising idol-worship as sincerely as the Christian. The Parsees reverence fire, water, earth and air. The government must, if possible, be so administered as not to disturb the religious sentiments of this variety of people.

The diversity of languages in India tends to separate its people. There are more than threescore of independent languages, each prevailing in its own territory, besides many dialects so distinct as often to be called separate languages. The collector familiar with the speech and customs of the Marathis of Bombay may not know a word of Tamil of South India. These people belong to two different races.

Added to these differences are the climatic variations. The northern and southern extremities of the territory are separated by twenty-nine degrees of latitude. The characteristics and occupations of the peoples in the various zones within these limits present great dissimilarities. In the south the heat is *perennial,* modified on either coast by the oceans adjoining. In the north there is intense heat in the summer, with occasional snows in winter and one monsoon (rainy season) lasting from June to October. There is little or no rain from October to June. In the south there are two monsoons, making the conditions of life unlike those in the north.

Digitized by Google

Another difficulty in the path of the government is the untrustworthiness of the people themselves. Honesty and integrity are not at par in India. When the farmer sows his seed he must begin at once to watch his field, otherwise his neighbor would inspect it during the night, bringing his cattle with him, and in the morning the growing blades would be eaten off level with the ground. The growing grain would all be stolen if the farmer was not on the alert. In harvest-time the reapers must be searched every evening to make sure that their pockets and shirts are not hiding grain. When the crop is on the threshing-floor the farmer, or one or more of his immediate family, must be there day and night to prevent its being carried off. A servant left in charge would probably sell a large portion of it and forget to give the money to the owner. Then the farmer himself must be watched by the *Mälguzär,* the *Patwäri,* the revenue inspector, or some other representative of the government, lest he sell his grain and make away with the money without paying his taxes. These minor officers of the government must be under surveillance lest they conspire with the farmer to cheat the government. So a great amount of machinery is required and an elaborate system of checks and counterchecks to enable the government to collect its revenue. Revenue is derived principally from land tax, salt tax, excise, income tax, licenses and octroi.

In the police department similar difficulties are found. Bribery is very common. If a crime is committed and the native police is given good "hush money," it is very difficult for the English officers to

Digitized by Google

bring the guilty party to light. On the other hand, it not infrequently happens that the police try to make business more lively by trumping up a case against an innocent party, with the hope of securing either a present from the accused as the price of abandoning the case or receiving favor from the superior officer for sagacity in the detection of crime.

Like perplexities embarrass the judicial department. A lawyer can get any number of witnesses to swear to anything he may dictate by paying two to four *annas* (4 to 8 cents) to each witness for his services. Of course, perjury is severely punished when it is clearly proven, but the art of dissembling is so highly developed and the schemes are so minutely elaborated that a very shrewd judge is required to detect a witness in a lie.

One case will illustrate a large class of the false-swearing: In a certain village a *Patel* (head man of the village) became too familiar with the reputed wife of the village watchman. The watchman went to the Patel's house and gave him a severe beating, using as his weapon his shoe, which is supposed to disgrace the recipient of the chastisement to the last degree. It is very rare that a humble man will dare to strike so important personage as a Patel; but in this case the watchman was furious that his home had been defiled, though he himself had never been lawfully married to the woman in question. After returning to his house the watchman bethought himself that the Patel had not yet received sufficient punishment for his misdeed and should be brought into court. But if he were

Digitized by Google

to charge the Patel with immoral conduct his own affairs would be brought into unpleasant notoriety in the neighborhood. A happy solution of the difficulty flashed into his mind. He talked with his friends about the matter and they agreed to assist him. His plan was to bring a charge of theft, instead of adultery, against the Patel. The case was carefully devised, the witnesses thoroughly trained, and, on the day of the trial, a dozen or more gave straight testimony. Not one in any wise contradicted the other, and the Patel was sentenced to six months in jail for stealing.

India is supplied with an abundance of lawyers, both English and native, and also a few who are Eurasians. Some of these are barristers and others have the lower rank of pleader. Many pleaders are being graduated from the law schools of India. The bright ones rise to the top of the profession, but with many of lesser power the question, "What shall we eat?" becomes a serious one.

The English endeavor to administer a just and impartial government, allowing all religions equal privileges. Some of the Hindu practices that were previously sheltered under the cover of religion, such as the burning of widows on the funeral piles of their deceased husbands, hook-swinging and similar practices, have been prohibited. There still remain other inhuman and immoral customs which will be suppressed in time.

All governments have made more or less mistakes in some parts of their administration. The English in India are no exception to the rule, and no one rec-

Digitized by Google

ognizes that fact more clearly than the Englishman himself. Many errors have been already corrected, but there are yet points open to criticism, such as their encouragement of the opium and liquor traffics; the high salaries paid to English officers; their failure to improve the conditions of the cultivator or to prevent the extortionate interest taken by the money-lenders; the long instability of their currency, now apparently remedied. The moral character of some of the English officers has not been a blessing to India. The majority, indeed, are choice men and many of grand personality; yet others have disgraced their position, and repelled the confidence of the natives.

However, British rule has been an incalculable blessing. India has never before had so just a government in all its history. Never until now has the whole country known peace, since its first settlement. The petty kingdoms, with shifting boundaries, that formerly were engaged in frequent external and internal wars, are now gathered under one stable government, conducted for the benefit of the governed and not for the glory of a single prince. There is a new feeling of security. Every one realizes that the English Government is firm and has come to stay. Religious freedom is protected and no one sect has the monopoly of privileges. General education and the arts and sciences are promoted with great energy. However dense the ignorance of the masses at the present day, and however much the enlightenment of the olden times may be praised by the pandits, the truth is that India was never so intelligent as now.

Digitized by Google

Railways, telegraphs, electric power, factories, commerce, methodical and systematic government, schools and colleges have been mighty forces for the uplifting and development of the country. But all these have come through European civilization. The more thoughtful of the native population recognize these benefits and are grateful for them. The people generally are content with the present rule. There are some agitators there, as in all countries, who endeavor to excite opposition, but with little success. India has large possibilities for development and the British have the opportunity and the power to accomplish great things in that important part of the Orient.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER III.

MISSIONS IN INDIA.

There are many missionary societies at work in India; yet hundreds, even thousands of towns and villages have never been visited by a missionary. According to the Missionary Directory there are ten Baptist societies with 256 missionaries; two Congregational societies with 159 missionaries; ten Church of England societies with 515 missionaries; fifteen Presbyterian societies with 460 missionaries; three Methodist societies with 298 missionaries; ten Lutheran societies with 259 missionaries; two Moravian societies with 27 missionaries; two Friends' or Quaker Societies with 25 missionaries; four female societies with 108 missionaries; twenty-three independent missions with 317 missionaries, making a total of eighty-two societies and 2,424 missionaries.

This would give the missionaries about 123,000 souls each to care for, if they could be evenly distributed among the 300,000,000 of India's people. To build up a successful mission in a center, schools, (day and boarding), workshops, colleges here and there, zenana work, training-classes and many other departments of work, are indispensable. The stations now occupied as mission centers are about 640.

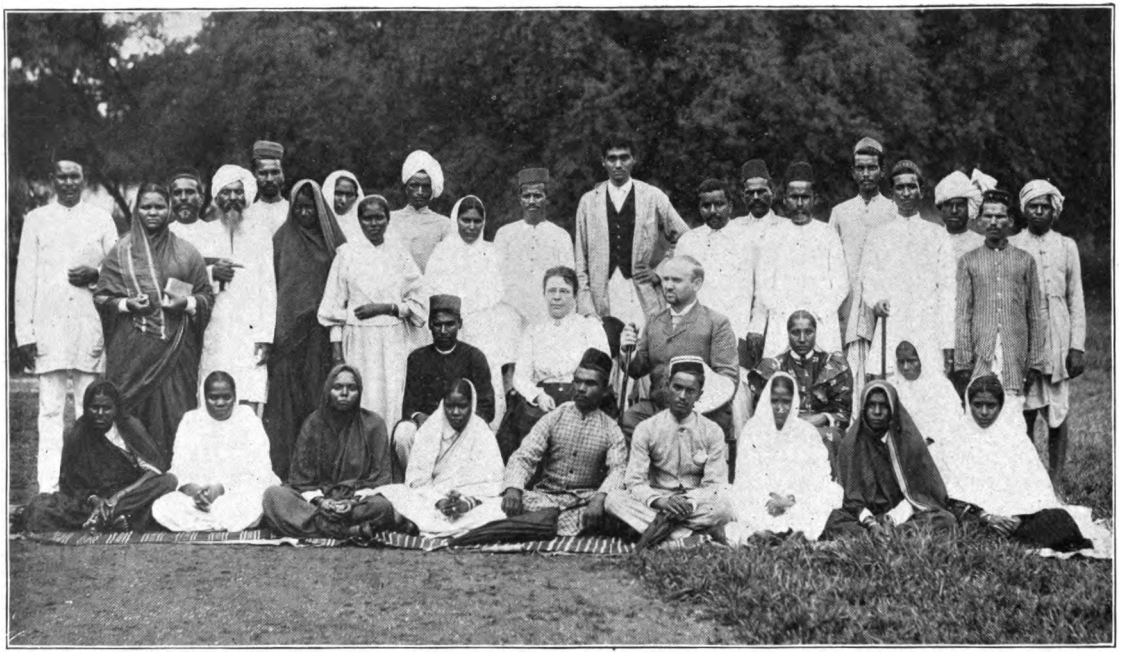
Digitized by Google

Most of the people reached belong to the low-caste, and are very poor, ignorant, helpless, and need much teaching and care to make them intelligent and sincere Christians. The *per cent* reached among the high is almost as great. A gentleman from America, visiting in India, said he thought a converted coolie or sweeper should be just as good a Christian as a converted student or college president. Would he apply this remark in the homeland and say that a converted denizen of the slums or a converted waif should be at once as good a Christian as a converted young man from college, who not only accepts the salvation of Christ and his precepts sincerely, but does so intelligently also? Paul did not seem to find his converts quite correct in practice for some years, even though he did not charge them with insincerity. Read his epistle carefully and note the things about which he charges those babes in Christ. How carefully the Christian father and mother watch and guard the little ones in their home! They know the little hearts love God, but of how many pitfalls they must be warned! Then how much more these babes in righteousness! A missionary once said to me: "In helpfulness and wisdom they are nearly all children, but in knowledge of sin every child is a man."

The Apostle said to his people: "Little children, keep yourselves from idols." He knew how insidious idolatry is, how it creeps into the marriage and burial customs, feasts, and daily life, and how powerful is the hold of old habits and superstitions. I will quote

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



A GROUP OF CHRISTIANS.

Digitized by Google

the answer given by my husband in one of the home papers to the question: "What sort of Christians have you?"

WHAT SORT OF CHRISTIANS HAVE YOU?

The question is often asked: "What sort of Christians have you in India?" The tone of the questioner implies a little doubt about the saintliness of our Christians here. We may answer that we have various sorts of people under the Christian name. They are not all holy. Some of them walk crooked. Some years ago one of my native preachers, who could speak some English, was telling me about another brother whose character was somewhat questionable. He said: "Sahib, I feel very doubtless about Ganpat." So there are some Christians about whom we feel "doubtless," and shall probably feel so until we see them inside of glory.

Sinful things happen in America, where the light of the gospel illuminated the grandfathers and great-grandfathers, where the shadow of the Cross falls on every cradle and the songs of Zion are the lullabies of every home. Here we are in a heathen land. Lying is almost universal. A lawyer can get all the witnesses he wants to swear in court to anything he dictates for five cents a head. A groceryman who would give full weight every time without being watched would be looked upon with suspicion. Little girls of many of the higher castes are put behind the purdah and are kept practically locked up to keep them pure. Boys of thirteen or fourteen and girls of ten or twelve become husband and wife that they may not violate the rules of decency. A Hindu told me recently that in a certain town of 10,000 people probably not one in twelve was chaste. I think the condition is better, however, than he estimated.

In an atmosphere like this, where from childhood up—yes, from past generations—sin of every kind has abounded, and has been looked upon as so light a thing, is it any wonder that some of our converts find it difficult to comprehend at once and

Digitized by Google

> live up to the Christian standard? After Paul had preached a long time in Corinth and indoctrinated the people in the truths of the Gospel he went to another city; but after some time he heard that one of the young church members at Corinth was living with his father's wife, and that the church thought so little of it that they had not even disciplined the young man. I never heard of a case like that in India.
>
> We occasionally have someone here, like Paul's Hymenæus and Alexander, who has to be turned over to the devil. But, on the other hand, we have others like Pandita Ramabai, who, although coming out of the moral slime of India, are spotless white lilies with hearts of gold. The Church in India is taking hold of Christ and his truth, and, considering the hole of the pit, from which it has been digged, the moral degradation of the heathen from among whom our Christians have come, the washing of regeneration and renewing of the Holy Ghost are very marked in the Indian Church.

This is an answer, brief and to the point; but many wonderful examples of deeply spiritual lives might be cited in our Hindustan Church, comprising all denominations. A little item which I noticed once in some notes of a correspondent from Rangoon might be given to show that even among the unlettered converts there is often deep conscientiousness about their Christian duty. Near Toungoo there is a large number of Christian Karens, whom the Baptist missionaries have taught to especially honor the Sabbath day. An English district official, while on tour, decided to strike camp and make a march one Sunday. To this end he made requisition for transport upon a neighboring Karen village. Imagine his surprise when the Karen headman told him that, as it was Sunday, he

Digitized by Google

and his people must spend the day as they believed right; but on the next day would be ready to help him on his journey. The official's dignity was offended and he laid hands on the Karen and maltreated him. A missionary sought redress from the official, but, obtaining none, appealed to higher officials. The official Sabbath-breaker was severely reprimanded, and the Lieutenant Governor said, in his reply: "I am authorized to say that his honor would discountenance any attempt to compel Christian natives of the country to work on Sunday."

Many suffer persecution of the most violent kind, and yet remain true to their profession of faith in Christ. Others, while not tormented bodily, go through extreme mental suffering on account of losing friends, family—all, when they come out openly as Christians. This was the case of Sooboo Nagam Ammal, whose story appears in this chapter. We know a young Parsee lad in Poona who was converted in Bombay at the street-preaching of the missionaries and their helpers. His family cast him off entirely and he found employment in an office at thirty rupees (ten dollars) per month. This, to him, was starvation pay, as he had been used to every luxury. Too poor to even ride on the street cars, he would stand on a corner and watch the elegant equipage of his father roll by, containing his proud mother and beautiful sisters in rich silks and costly jewels. This young man finally entered a training-class in Poona to fit himself for a Gospel worker, never expecting to re-

Digitized by Google

ceive any more worldly aid than the pittance paid him in the office.

Another young man, a former Brahmin, was so humble and devout that he willingly taught a school composed of sweeper-boys. Earnest Christians at home are not always willing to teach once a week in a negro school, yet this could not evidence their devotion as did the act of the Brahmin youth, for whatever our race prejudices, in our religion we are taught that there is neither Jew nor Greek, bond nor free; while this boy's teaching from childhood had been to regard the Sudra and the out-caste as unworthy even to be touched or to hear the truth.

Another young man we know about was tied to a beam in the room, an ax held over him and threatened with having his tongue burned through for uttering the name of Jesus. His father-in-law, for he had been married in childhood, had his little girl's head shaved in token that she was a widow; yet none of these things moved this brave young spirit.

In the Khassia Hills, in the Welsh mission near Shillong, there is a Christian village. The few who have not yet become real Christians, join the others in observing the Sabbath. An old chief, or sirdar there, for years used to bring an annual thank-offering to the Lord of a tenth of all his earnings, besides giving a monthly subscription to the ministry and other objects. On one occasion he asked a missionary to write down each item of income received during the year. Then he said: "Add them up and divide by ten, that I may know how much I owe to the Lord." That evening, at

Digitized by Google

a church-meeting, the old chief brought a large bundle of rupees and laid it on the table as his thank-offering to his Lord and Master.

If many county chiefs in Christian lands would bring similar bundles to the Lord yearly, how fast the Gospel-car would move! Many steadfast and deeply spiritual Christians are well known to all who have worked in India. Zahur Ul-Haqq of North India, who became a presiding elder in the American Methodist mission, was a grand man, who after much persecution had the happiness of winning both wife and sons to the Christian religion. In the American mission at Nagar a Hindu boy attending the school was converted, who but recently, after a long and devoted life, went to his reward. This was Ramchandra Babaji Powar. When he decided to openly confess his faith he was subjected to great persecution. When his mother found that he was firm she beat her breast with a large stone until it swelled. Then she went home and hid herself in a dark chamber and was never seen by anyone until the day she died, a few months after. This news almost overwhelmed Mr. Powar, but he was sustained by his trust in God. He was baptized by the Rev. Murray Mitchell and received into the Free Church. He taught his little girl-wife the truths of the Christian religion and she, too, was at length baptized. He was well-educated and received offers of government service, but refused all to preach God's word; yet he would not be ordained, as he thought it wrong to call a man reverend."

Digitized by Google

You might extend this list and have a modern eleventh chapter of Hebrews, for time would fail to tell of the faith of Ramabai, Chundra Leela, the converted fakir, and of many others in the Indian Christian Church.

What more wonderful story of heroism than that of Sooboo Nagam Ammal? She belonged to a proud, high-caste family in Madras. Her father was a judge in the High Court and her husband was in government employ. She was a pet and indulged favorite at home, for her husband had never taken her to his home, as she was one of a pair of twins and born on a Friday; so her coming would bring misfortune to his house. She was honored as a married woman, however, and riches and position count in India as elsewhere. To her was intrusted the worship of the gods, and in all ceremonies and rites she became proficient. Her desire to become perfect in all these caused her to long for the accomplishment of reading, as then she could read the sacred Vedas and know more about the will of the gods. At this time she was having manufactured a golden image of herself bowing before her favorite god. This was to adorn a temple which she was building with her own means. No one could be found who would teach her except the Zenana Mission workers. This greatly disturbed her people.

"Yes, they will teach you to read, but they will also teach you this new religion about Jesus."

"No, no," Sooboo told them. "What they teach me about *that* will go in one ear and out the other."

Digitized by Google

The lessons of this newer and purer religion did not go out, however, but sank into an earnest and inquiring heart, for the haughty Brahmin bowed at the feet of the lowly man of Nazareth and learned of him. Her hope was that she might remain in her home and teach her relatives and friends. But this, in an orthodox Hindu house, is well-nigh impossible. Persuasions, caresses, then coldness, and finally persecution followed. A plot was set on foot by which they hoped to spirit her away to a temple in Bangalore and there dedicate her to the god of the temple. In connection with thousands of temples in India there are houses for the poor girls who are married to the gods. These, in reality, become the temple prostitutes. In Western India, around Poona, hundreds of little girls are married in this way to "Khandoba." Even a beautiful Eurasian child was with difficulty saved from this fate, which her heathen mother had planned. When Sooboo heard this she fled at night to the missionaries' bungalow. Here her friends and relatives followed to persuade her to return; but she had chosen the true God, and Jesus, whom He had sent to redeem men.

When persuasion and threats all failed her family made an effigy of Sooboo, which they carried through the streets, wailing out: "Sooboo is dead! Sooboo is dead!" As she listened to this she found it almost unbearable. But finally she took her fingers from her ears, realizing that Sooboo, the once proud, "twice-born" *Brahmin* Sooboo, was *indeed* dead; but that she was alive again in Christ, who can do all things. The effigy was burned on the funeral-pyre and Sooboo's

Digitized by Google

old mother went forth from that house of wealth to beg her way on foot to the sacred Ganges, where she scattered the ashes of the image of her daughter, hoping thus to expiate her sin. Sooboo is now "dead" to them in a way that none of our loved dead ever become.

On the day she was baptized she stepped forward and sang in Tamil:

"Jesus, I my cross have taken,
All to leave and follow thee;
Naked, poor, despised, forsaken,
Thou from hence my all shall be."

Was this song ever more literally sung?

And now, going from village to village and into the Zenanas, this humble follower of the meek and lowly one, spends her days. While on a visit to America and speaking here and there of her own experience and of her sisters all over India, she said: "My heart is always in Madras!" Many of these shut-in women of India are "gems" for the Master's crown. I have changed the beautiful verses from Gray's elegy to fit such souls as these:

Full many a gem of purest ray serene
The dark unfathomed "Purdah" homes doth bear;
Full many a flower is born to blush unseen
And waste its sweetness on that poisoned air.

But into India's closest shut-in home
The loving Savior's call has sounded sweet,
And leaving wealth and rank and all, they come
And break their alabaster boxes at his feet.

Vishnu Bhaskar Karmarkar, the father of the Christian family of Karmarkars, in Bombay, was a notable

Digitized by Google

convert of the past generation. As a teacher in a government girls' school, he came in contact with Christian missionaries, whom he had invited to come and teach embroidery and sewing in his school. After he was induced to read the Bible, he soon became convinced of its truth and, as soon as he decided to accept Christ as his personal Savior, bitter persecution came and his foes were those of his own household. Once a great mob came prepared to take him to a shrine to have the rites of purification performed, and to receive him back into caste. He, too, was ceremonially cremated and counted as dead. His position as principal of the school was taken away, as parents refused to send their daughters to a Christian teacher. The missionaries then offered him a school in which there were many low-caste, or pariah children. This was possible to the once proud, bigoted Brahmin, only because he had received the power from Christ's grace and example. From among the few pupils who came from the higher castes, Vishnu chose his life companion. They two were instrumental in securing great privileges from the crown for the Christian community. The Hindus forbade the Christians to draw water from the public wells. These two Christians, formerly high-caste Hindus, decided to stand for their old rights and privileges and thus secured a great blessing to the entire Christian community. Accordingly Sarzabai, Vishnu Karmarkar's wife, went to a well, and, amid the protests and threats of the crowd, drew a pitcher of water. The next day she found the water polluted and quietly passed on to another

Digitized by Google

well. This aroused a great storm. The Hindus appealed to the courts to protect their wells from the despised Christians. Vishnupunt Karmarkar was summoned and urged not to disturb the peace-loving Hindus. He, however, stood firmly for his rights, requesting the judge to deal with the case according to the law, which gave him liberty to use the public wells. The judge referred the matter to the Bombay government. From there it went to the Viceroy and then to the Queen, who decided in favor of the native Christians. (Res. No. 34, 9th August, 1860.)

Vishnu Karmarkar founded a printing-press in Bombay, which his sons operated for some years after his death. His elder brother was converted at one of his services of song. Having given up caste, position and family, he has founded a new family of Christian Karmarkars, who are prominent in Christian benevolence and usefulness. Both sons are in the ministry, one being a Yale divinity graduate, while the daughter gives her time and energy to teaching a class of poor children in Colaba, Bombay.

As this old veteran was dying he asked his children to sing:—

> Oh! happy day that fixed my choice
> On thee my Saviour and my God.

Then he said: "Open the door and let me fly above. I desire to enter a large place."

CHUNDRA LEELA.

This woman, when left a widow, determined to spend her life in securing peace of soul. In order to do this she went to shrine after shrine, visiting Jaga-

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

A BIBLE CART IN INDIA.

(From an electro supplied by the Zenana Bible and Medical Mission.)

Digitized by Google

nath, Benares, Ramanath and many other sacred sites. At one time she sat among the "seven fires." That is, fires built all around her and the blazing May sun over head. Seeking truth she went about begging bread and inflicting torture upon herself until she heard the Gospel story—and her fetters were broken. Ever since then she has gone about, seemingly tireless, teaching her new faith and the redemptive power of Christ, and anxious to do as much for her loving Savior as she used to do for heathen gods. These are some of the trophies of Christian missions. But we may not speak of these only. The failure and apostasy of the weak ones should spur us on to teach and preach more indefatigably. What may we expect in a land of heathen darkness and among a people used to idolatry and its practices?

Sometimes village Christians, untutored and superstitious, are drawn away by the sophistry of the old priests whom they feared and obeyed before they embraced Christianity. One of the saddest as well as one of the most tragic of such events was told me by a person most intimately concerned and affected. Phœbe Rowe was among our most remarkable and most devoted of Eurasian evangelists. She gave her life to labor among the low-caste Christians. Especially did her heart go out to the women in such communities. One day she went, in company with Mother Catherine and the native pastor, to visit a village which could receive but scant pastoral care on account of the amount of work put upon one pair of shoulders. When they entered the town everything was in the greatest

Digitized by Google

confusion. All the inmates of the little mud-huts had congregated in an open space, where, led by the priests of their caste, they had set up a shrine to "Lall Beg," the red prince, and were preparing to offer cocks as sacrifice to him. The poor, weak Christians were abashed at the appearance of their pastor and the beloved evangelist and her helper. After much pleading by the latter, and noisy threatenings from the priests, who saw that their craft was in danger, the people declared their willingness to return to allegiance to the Christians' God.

"Then destroy the shrine," the pastor suggested. But, looking at the angry priests, they were afraid to comply. In spite of their better judgment, they feared disaster would follow such a daring act.

"May I do it?" the pastor asked, for he feared its presence among them. They consented and the poor little shrine of clay and lime was soon utterly demolished. The pastor, however, wishing to demonstrate the nothingness of the idol, called on him (Lall Beg) to destroy him if he had any power.

"Let Lall Beg destroy me to-night if he has any power," he said.

At about eleven o'clock Miss Rowe was called to the pastor's tent, to find him in violent convulsions, and in a few hours he was dead. Miss Rowe herself felt weak and ill, and soon after went to the hills, where she, too, died after two weeks. Shall we attribute this to the machinations of the baffled priests, or is it possible that it was a coincidence? We do not believe it could have been a mere coincidence. Miss

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

HARDWICKE CHRISTIAN BOYS' SCHOOL, NARSINGHPUR.
This building was once the palace of a petty Rajah.

Digitized by Google

Rowe, in writing to me about it, said that it was the most depressing thing that had ever come into her experience. Of course, many in that village and many in surrounding villages returned to "Lall Beg's" worship. Can we hope to find no apostasy amid such hoary heathenism as that of India?

But it is not only among the high-caste that we find such conversions as Karmarkar's, Powar's, Pundita Ramabai's, or Kali Bannerjee's, a pleader in the High Court of Calcutta, but many among the humble people, are faithful even unto death.

Many low-caste boys and girls are attaining to honorable positions in the community and are winning thousands of their own people. Amid persecution which has never touched us; amid heathen superstitions and iron-bound caste-rules, is growing up a people from many peoples; a noble brotherhood and sisterhood having one faith, one ambition, one hope, one God.

ORPHANAGES IN INDIA.

In all the various missions in India, supported by money from America, Great Britain, Australia and other countries, we find these beneficent institutions. Thousands of homeless children are gathered into these orphanages, cared for, instructed and trained for useful lives.

During years of famine in India, when the harvests fail, is the time for the great harvest of children to be gathered into these orphanages and trained and taught in the pure religion of Christ. Many orphanages were born of the famine of 1876-77 and, during the famine

Digitized by Google

of 1896-97, through which we ourselves passed, in one of the worst affected districts in India, thousands of children were rescued and given homes in these Christian institutions. And now, while I write, the present famine of 1899-1900 is upon us and this rescue work is still going on. In Gujerat alone, in one mission, there are over 1,700 boys and girls now in the orphanages, and this same mission expects the government to give them as many more when the poorhouses, established during the famine, shall be closed. In other parts of India this same work is going on. These schools not only impart book-knowledge to the boys and girls, but in almost all cases the teaching embraces useful manual employments, trades and industries. In the girls' schools, I know of the following industries being taught: Domestic work, needle-work, knitting, crocheting, net-making, pillow-lace, thread-buttons, weaving, bead-work, reed-basket making, spinning, carpet-making, cotton-raising, gardening, bread and cake-making, laundry work, copying and various other occupations.

From this you will see that the schools are educating the girls away from many of the nonsensical caste ideas that cripple individuality and tend to idleness and shiftlessness. For example, people here in India receiving as low wages as $4.00 a month, or even as little as $2.75, will nevertheless hire their washing done. So degrading is "Dhobis' work" considered, that some sub-castes among the "Knights of the Broom," as the sweepers are called, will not eat with those who do this work.

Digitized by Google

There is no one thing more trying to an energetic person from England or America than the prevalent indolence in India. Hindu and Mohammedan women often sit idle for hours, while the house, the clothing and the children are fairly crying out for attention. Even native Christian women, who have never been taught a single useful art in their girlhood, or who have been taken from school before they were really trained, will sit idle at their doors for hours. To train them after they are married and have little ones around them is extremely difficult. The well-trained girls from our schools are often helpful as Bible-women, besides keeping themselves, their children and their houses neat and tidy. In many cases they bring in a little revenue to the home by employing leisure moments in sewing, knitting or crocheting. In a school in Ajmere, the girls are taught laundry-work with the aid of proper American wash-boards. When these girls marry young men working at trades, they will not be ashamed to do the family washing. In the mission with which I am best acquainted there are more than three thousand girls in the schools. A small proportion of this number are boarders, and their parents pay fees according to the salaries they receive. The greater part are, however, orphans, most of whom have been rescued during the famine times already mentioned. Many of these girls will go out as teachers and helpers in mission work, but the majority will undoubtedly marry men who are now boys in the mission schools. These boys, as we have seen, are also being trained to manual labor, thus even those who are

Digitized by Google

capable of entering the professions will not look upon work as degrading as the caste people do. And so, from different classes, we shall see growing up an industrious, self-respecting and independent Christian community, and the question of Church autonomy in India will find its solution. In the boys' schools the variety of industries taught is perhaps still greater. They embrace telegraphy, bookkeeping, shoemaking, carpentry, wire-mattress weaving, cloth-weaving, farming, wood-carving, bookbinding, printing, tailoring and many others.

From one of the oldest of the boys' schools we have the report of a principal who was in charge for fourteen years, who states that to his knowledge one hundred and five had left the school to enter useful employment, the greater number becoming mission-workers. A large number went from this school to study theology and afterwards entered the ministry, while some are editors or assistant editors. In one case, from another school, a sweeper-boy is reported who grew up in the orphanage and afterwards took the degree of B. A., and is now head master in a high-school. Of twenty girls' schools, whose condition and history I have studied well, there are over one thousand pupils who are really Christian in heart and life, while there are many more who are Christian nominally. From these same schools at least twelve have become Bible-women and Zenana workers, three evangelists, two doctors, and fifty-five teachers; but most of the pupils are still too young to indicate what their future will be. Indeed, all the schools, with but few excep-

Digitized by Google

tions, are young; therefore, we cannot as yet give a clear idea of the vast amount of good being done by these institutions. Some of the histories of the boys and girls now in the schools, and of men and women who have gone out from them, are interesting and pathetic in the extreme. One Bible-woman, who is now working at Bassim, was sold by her mother in the famine of 1876-77 for four *annas* (eight cents) and then resold to a Gypsy tribe for twelve rupees. From the latter she was rescued and reared in the orphanage.

Another woman's story reads like a romance. In the famine of 1861 her parents, having no food to give her, buried her alive, doubtless thinking by so doing to get rid of one mouth to feed and also to end the little one's sufferings. The earth was loose and dry, and the child worked her head out. In this condition she was found by a native policeman, who brought her to the orphanage at Bareilly, where she was reared and educated. She was married over thirty years ago to a preacher, who became a fully ordained minister ten years later. She has reared a family of twelve children—eleven girls and one boy—and by those who know her she is regarded as one of the most devoted of women, an exemplary minister's wife and an efficient worker in the church. All her children have done well. As a leader of meetings, writer of essays and a noble mother, she is one of the finest women in our native church.

There are many more such stories to be told of the boys and girls from these schools. The curriculum of

Digitized by Google

study is that prescribed by the government in the various vernaculars of India. Most of the schools receive grants appropriated to tuition from government funds, depending upon the examinations. This is really a very small amount. The bulk of the support is from benevolent people in Christian lands, for food and clothing and shelter must be provided as well as instruction. The opportunity for religious and moral training is very important. Adult converts rid themselves of heathen practices and superstitions but slowly, especially if uneducated and ignorant, but the children in these schools, in very many instances, attain a Christian character which, without such training, is seldom reached until the second or third generation of Christianizing.

A missionary of over forty years' experience in India, who has herself been for years in charge of a large orphanage, gives the following recommendation to the boys and girls she has known to go out from the schools. She says: "Some of our best teachers and preachers were educated in our orphanages; some fill important positions; some are good doctors and, indeed, I don't know how we could have gone on with our work without the help we have had from the orphan boys and girls."

These children, who are not cared for by their families, become our very own, and, while undoubtedly some prove unthankful and return to Hinduism and Mohammedanism, yet the great majority become instructors of their own people, build up the Christian church in India and exemplify Christian living in a dark and idolatrous land.

Digitized by Google

CLASS OF BOYS STUDYING ENGLISH IN HARDWICKE CHRISTIAN BOYS' SCHOOL.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IV.

CITY OF THE PESHWAS.

Poona, called the City of the Peshwas, was at one time the scene of Sivaji's warlike glory, and afterward that of the Peshwas, who had their rise under Sivaji's grandson. This grandson was, for a long time, held in captivity by the Mohammedans, among whom he learned habits of luxury and indolence and became very unlike his warlike ancestors. When he came into possession of his kingdom he resigned the management of his territories to his prime minister, giving him the title of Peshwa. This title and authority became hereditary, and the power of the Peshwas soon exceeded that of the kings. These Peshwas built up the great Maratha Confederacy, having its headquarters in Poona. While the Marathas have no distinct political power, yet here they still hold bigoted and almost undisputed religious sway; here, too, is the seat of much political unrest and occasional outbreaks against the English government.

It would be difficult to find a finer race of men than the Maratha Brahmins, and their dress is calculated to accentuate their naturally attractive appearance. Their *pugries* or head-dresses are very becoming, and the gold threads woven into the cloth from which the *pugries* are made, give an effect of richness and refinement to their heads. The women are not

Digitized by Google

kept in *purdah* as are most high-class Hindu and Mohammedan women in other parts of India. While the male and female members of the household live very separate lives, and there is nothing to correspond to our ideas of society and social equality of the sexes, yet the women are seen driving about the city and in the parks and going on foot as well, without covering their faces unless to ward off a particularly impertinent stare. The Marathi women (the ending *a* is masculine while the *i* is feminine) would be much finer looking were it not for their manner of dressing their hair, which is drawn back so tightly that it causes total or partial baldness on the sides and crown of the head. They wear many jewels and a company of the younger women, who still have plenty of black hair, when in holiday attire, present a very attractive appearance.

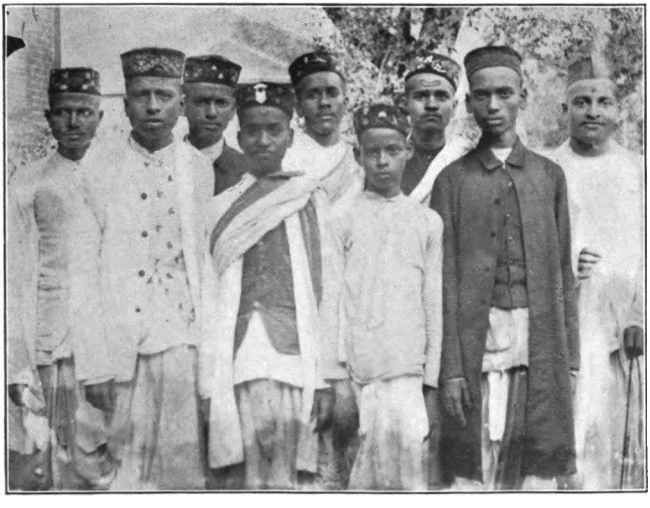
The city of Poona has now a population of 130,000. It is built on a bare, rocky plateau of the western ghäts, about 2,000 feet above the sea. It is surrounded by rocks and hills and the level stretches are very barren in appearance. In and about the city, particularly in the Cantonments, or European section, there are beautiful tree-lined drives and avenues.

The city is considered healthy for the most part, but during the time of plague it had an awful visitation. The sanitary measures considered necessary by government, were strongly resented by the people, especially the inspection of houses, which was looked upon as an interference with sacred customs and an insult to the privacy of the women. Many wives of English officials, appreciating both the prejudices of

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

AMERICAN MISSIONARY IN MARATHI COSTUME.



GROUP OF HIGH-CASTE YOUTHS, POONA, INDIA.

Digitized by Google

this proud people and also the necessity on the part of government to stay the plague by all possible, lawful means, stepped nobly into the breach and volunteered to visit the houses themselves in place of the soldiers deputed for this work. Even this sacrifice did not prevent much disturbance, which culminated in the murder of two English officials.

The population is of high-and-low-caste Hindus, a good portion of Mohammedans and 8,000 Europeans, including the English soldiers. In the native city there is an institution for the education of high-caste youths, and Poona claims to have had the first girls' school in India. In the English portion there are comfortable bungalows, as the better sort of houses are called, and many schools and colleges. On the occasion of a great fête, given by the Governor's wife to all European school-children, there were present 1,400 children. This suggests the importance of the European element in the city. The crowded native city, with its bazaars of cloth-shops and sweetmeat stands, and with brass and other wares, is very interesting. Some of the unique curios in Poona are the *putlies,* or images done in clay and colored most artistically and true to life. These represent the various castes and occupations in Indian society and life.

All classes sit on the floor while eating and use brass or silver plates. If the company is large, green leaves, such as the banana leaf, may do duty as plates. All eat with their fingers. Much of the cooking is very palatable and pleasant.

At a wedding breakfast we saw a curious custom.

Digitized by Google

At the close of the meal the bride took a good-sized ball of sweetmeat, or soft candy, and, with her fingers, pushed it into the husband's mouth. The bridegroom then selected a similar sweet-ball and, breaking off a very small piece, placed it in the mouth of the bride. This may not be meant to be symbolical, but in India it is certainly the tiny bite only of life's sweetmeats that usually falls to the lot of the poor wife.

The special gods worshiped here are the sacred bull, Ganesha, the elephant-headed, and especially Parwati, one of the forms of Siva's wife. To the latter is erected the special temple found in Poona. Ganesha is often called the "God of Wisdom," but Sir Monier Williams contradicts the appropriateness of the title and claims that he is the god of humble villages and of the lower orders. He is usually invoked at the beginning of a book and before examinations are undertaken. This, however, is not that he may impart wisdom, but that he may protect from evil spirits and demons who will obstruct the student's progress. The view held by Hindu aspirants to literary honors is a very comforting one. It ascribes all failure to the workings of bad spirits and powers and not at all to intellectual incapacity. This insures a man's equanimity even in government examinations, whatever the result, whether an actual degree of "F. A." or "B. A.," or, as they express it, "F. A." failed or "B. A." failed, the reply to your inquiries will be the same: *"Khuda ka Marzi"*—"It is the will of God."

There are many students here, and Poona prides herself on being among the foremost of Indian cities

Digitized by Google

in point of education. This does not prevent her from hissing a public lecturer should he seem to trench upon their old religion or urge too strongly the claim of a new faith.

TEMPLE OF PARWATI.

On a high hill, outside and to the south of the great heathen city of Poona, stands the temple of Parwati. After Benares, this temple is perhaps the best place in which to see real idolatry. Here there is not that wanton reveling in all that is coarse and loathsome that we see at Benares, but here, too, many of the symbols and images are of such a character as to forbid their being mentioned in detail. We drive for about three miles from the European part of the city, over beautiful, paved roads, between cactus and lantana hedges which border banana swamps and garden patches. This brings us to the foot of the hill, which can be ascended in chairs borne by coolies or on foot. Preferring to walk, we raised the inevitable umbrella and began the climb. The hill is about 300 feet high and the top is reached by a winding flight of wide, low stone steps, which carry you up and around the elevation. These steps are of various sizes. Sometimes one walks across a slab for seven or eight feet before the next step is reached. Each step or terrace is on a steep incline, making the whole ascent very difficult. The Prince of Wales, when visiting India, ascended these steps on the back of an elephant, which must have been anything but a pleasant mode of climbing. We saw numbers of bullocks coming up by another and narrower road, carrying skins and vessels filled with

Digitized by Google

water for use in the temple worship. At various points we stopped to rest and look at the beautiful landscape below. The river Tapti, winding its way through the fertile strip of its own making, the canal bringing drinking-water from the great artificial lake Karakka Wasla, out on the distant hills, and all the diversity of grove, field and village and the city itself, were clothed by distance in added beauty and divested of squalor and uncleanness. At one of these resting-places we stood under a spreading neem tree, quite near the steps. There was a sort of stone altar near the trunk, and here, as late as 1875, although contrary to law at that time, Hindu widows were burned alive with the dead bodies of their husbands. The old priest who pointed out the spot smiled, seeming in no way horrified at the thought. As we proceeded on our way we thought of the wailing processions which had ascended the hill, stopping under the neem tree for the horrible rite of *suttee,* and then proceeding to the temple to perform their worship—no one weeping for the young life sacrificed, except perhaps the little ones whom cruel custom thus made motherless because already fatherless. I wondered if the children were allowed to see their mother burned—but the mere thought was unendurable, and I was glad when we reached the top. The temple is surrounded by nondescript buildings—small temples, each containing an idol, rows of cells for the celibate priests, or stables for the sacred cattle kept there. In the little temples or shrines, containing each a single image, there is a small space in front of the idol where the worshiper sits or kneels

Digitized by Google

while performing *puja,* or worship. Ganesha or Gunpatti; the sun-god, and many others were thus enshrined. A fine golden-domed structure shelters the principal idol, representing the goddess Parwati, for whom it is named. This image, like most of the others, is made of finest alabaster and ornamented with gold, silver and jewels. A number of richly clothed Brahmin women were prostrating themselves before it and offering flowers, oil and butter before the shrine. These women were unveiled, as it is only when in other parts of India where *purdah* is strictly observed that the Marathi women keep *purdah.* We saw them before the image of the sacred bull, and it was piteous to see the coarse and even low actions performed in accordance with the teachings of their religion, while otherwise they appeared to be good and modest women.

Many of the priests go through the ceremonies as meaningless rites which hold no solemnity for them. Wishing to have a picture of one of them at worship we asked a young fellow, who spoke good English, if we might photograph him. He said if we would give him six annas we might. He then went off to bathe and came back almost naked, crawling into the shrine and beginning to arrange his little vessels of oil and incense. He first warned us not to speak to him while he was praying, but as he kept his eyes on the camera nearly all the time, we feared his silence was merely the fulfilling of the letter of the law. This young priest afterwards told us that he believed in none of these things. He had been educated in a Christian college and he said he knew there was noth-

Digitized by Google

ing in all this flummery; but as he had succeeded to this position on the death of his brother, his family would be disgraced if he refused. It was a lucrative place. Why should he not take it? It was probably this same priest who gave the striking and perchance prophetic answer to Bishop Foster, who, in company with Bishop Thoburn, visited this temple. The bishop asked him: "How long has all this worship been going on here?" "For thousands of years" was the reply. "And how long will it last?" the bishop inquired. "Not long," the young priest replied. "And why," continued the bishop. The Hindu hesitated, but raising his hand and pointing with his finger he swept the line of the horizon and simply said, "Jesus." It was the old prophecy in the grand old hymn:

> Jesus shall reign where'er the sun
> Does his successive journeys run;
> His kingdom spread from shore to shore
> Till moons shall wax and wane no more.

These idols are bathed, fed, put to sleep and awakened. The idea is that the image imprisons a spirit which is pleased with libations of oil or butter and offerings of grain and flowers. The spirit consumes the ethereal portion of the food while the priests take the substantial, as is well evidenced by their fat and flourishing condition.

When putting the idol to sleep, unearthly music on conch shells and other queer instruments is made. A similar noise, with the addition of some bell-ringing serves to awaken him. No wonder the prophet of old told the people derisively to cry aloud, as perchance their god slept or had gone on a journey. Judging

Digitized by Google

from the almost incessant noise in some temples, the god must be a sort of Morpheus. Washings, prayers, offerings and caste-observances—these are the religion of the Hindu, with the Brahmin as his spiritual head, if the term spiritual may be applied to cruelty, avarice and moral decay. Religion is not connected with morality, as we understand it. To eat with a low-caste man is a far more heinous crime than to lie, steal or commit adultery, if these things are done in a way that shall not hurt caste. In each caste there is a *Panchaiyat* or council of five and this council regulates or decides upon the permissibility of certain acts or of conduct in general, while the outward worship is offered to the gods. Thus they follow cunningly devised fables and degrade the God-head to the level of the loathsome creatures represented by the idols. This is the essence of idolatry. It is not a harmless bowing down to wood and stone, as many in Western lands imagine it. There is an inwardness, corresponding to this outward worship, which is full of vileness and corruption. Many otherwise inexplicable traits in the people become plain as we search for the meaning of these rites and symbols of idolatry. The gods and goddesses worshiped in the guise of wood and stone and gold, are impure and full of uncleanness. No wonder, even in beautiful Athens, before the Acropolis crowned with its marvelous temples of the gods, that Saint Paul's heart was filled with grief as he saw the people wholly given over to idolatry. How much more in India, where there is not even esthetic beauty to gloss over the moral corruption of the gods! For as

Digitized by Google

the gods are, so shall the people become. But all this shall indeed not last long, as the Brahmin said. Some day on Parwati another temple shall stand, containing no idol or shrine and only witnessing the offerings of meek and lowly hearts, and the worship shall be that of Jesus.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER V.

CHILD-WIDOWS.

The stories of one little widow, and of Runabai, given in later chapters, exhibit the condition of child-widows in a sufficiently strong light, yet, lest some may think these are isolated cases, a few additional facts and examples may be valuable to show that their lot is always a pitiable one, though they are not treated with equal severity in all parts of India.

Among the various nationalities in India, Hindus form the larger proportion. Altogether there are 140,000,000 women in India, while among the Hindus alone there are 23,000,000 widows. Taking from these the aged widows, widows with families and widows of all but the two higher castes, Sir William Hunter says that "there can be no less than one million young widows of the Brahmin and Rajput castes to whom the system of enforced celibacy must be held to be a cruel infringement of their natural rights." These were widowed in early childhood. He further says that, adding these to young women in other high castes, there can be no less than two million of widows to whom the existing Hindu law is an injustice and a wrong. These two million women are equal in number to all the women in Scotland. All Hindu girls at the age of fifteen are either wives or widows. This is, of course, owing to the system of child-marriage

Digitized by Google

which was instituted to escape the disgrace of having an unmarried daughter on the parents' hands. In 1856 a law was passed by the English government legalizing the remarriage of widows. Some few earnest reformers have been brave enough to marry educated widows from Pandita Ramabai's school, and, here and there, similar cases occur; but the iron law of custom is so strong that few are able to face the terrible ostracism and boycotting resulting from such a procedure. The widow, if she marries, loses all claim to her first husband's property, though if she remains unmarried and lives a sinful life she can still hold her inheritance.

Rammohun Roy, India's greatest modern reformer, accomplished much against fearful odds for the elevation of women. He was the first native of rank and influence who broke through the invincible prejudice of centuries and crossed the "black water." He arrived in England in 1830 and did all he could to prevent the repeal of the bill abolishing *sati* (usually written as pronounced, *suttee*). This bill was passed in 1829, through his exertions, and has never been repealed. For years before the horrible custom of immolating widows on the funeral pyre of their husbands had been forbidden by law, the English officials used to be present to give the widow a fair chance of escape, if at last she repented of the assent she had given to the fearful rite. Previous to the English rule the priests were accustomed to force her back upon the pyre to fulfill her vow. Although this dreadful custom has been abolished for nearly three-quarters of a

Digitized by Google

century, yet so sad is the lot of the widow that, as a Hindu expresses it, "she now endures *cold suttee.*"

Mrs. Fuller quotes a number of Indian gentlemen in regard to the woes of Indian women and the disadvantage under which they labor, and I shall take a few of these quotations because some may think that missionaries, seeing isolated cases, magnify the condition as a whole. Some men and women of India, being happily situated themselves, deny the statements because they have not come into personal contact with suffering. Hence they find it difficult to believe it exists.

In our own land and in England, how many favored women know absolutely nothing of the sorrows of the slums in their own cities! Pundita Ramabai has said that when she was sixteen or seventeen years of age, although she had visited nearly every sacred shrine in India with her parents and brother, yet she was so shielded that she never knew of the evils then, which in later life she so graphically set forth after seeing them herself. Many live very exclusive lives in their own caste and know very little of what occurs in other castes about them. We take a quotation from the "Indian Social Reform" of December, 1898:

> In the days of my early childhood, in those days when the mind can hardly penetrate through the thick folds of mystery which shroud half the things of this world, my simple mind was drawn to the subject of the Hindu Widow. Her melancholy attire, her disfigured head, her care-worn appearance, the rude way in which she is handled by our society, all these created in me the impression that the widow somehow belonged not to the ranks of the two recog-

Digitized by Google

nized sexes, that possibly she might be a being of a third sex, or else a member of a totally different species of the animal world. Nearly twenty-five years have elapsed since that crude notion entered my brain, and yet not all the education and the experience I have gained have totally erased that belief of mine, though they have considerably modified it, as they do many of our childish vagaries and crudities. Verily the Hindu widow belongs to a separate sex, a different order of living things! Widowhood anywhere is tormenting enough, and in this glorious land of Arvavartha, custom adds insult to injury.

Another quotation from the same paper:

The fiat has gone forth that all widows in the land should invariably live lives of celibacy. In obedience to the mandates of custom, all Hindu widows are celibates, or must seem so. But custom is not satisfied with this. The crown of her head must be rudely handled by the man of the razor. Not all the shrieks of the sorrowing children, the indescribable misery of the widow herself, can interpose between the monster and his victim.

The third quotation is from an educated gentleman, Dr. R. G. Bhandarker, C. I. E., Vice-chancellor of the Bombay University. December 27th, 1894, in an address he said:

Custom is a god whom our race devoutly worships, and religious sanction has acceded to these practices by the insertion of later texts in the later books. The question now is, whether, with our minds liberalized by English education and contact with European civilization, we shall still continue to worship custom and be its slaves, and allow our moral sentiments to remain dead and our unjust and cruel practices to flourish. If an education does not lead us to protest against them, that education must be considered to be merely superficial. Custom has been and is an authority. Custom is our religion.

Digitized by Google

Many Indian gentlemen there are who firmly believe many of the Hindu customs to be wrong and cruel, yet, in the face of social ostracism, few are brave enough to marry widows, though ever so beautiful—women who perhaps never saw the men whose death had plunged them into life-long disgrace and celibacy. How often the poor young things fly into open sin to escape the thralldom of their lot! What easy victims these poor, ill-treated girls are to designing, wicked men, who promising comfort and love encompass the ruin of their confiding victim!

One little widow, granted by her father as a gift to Ramabai, had been dreadfully burned by her mother-in-law because she had tasted the food before the men had eaten. The father of the child, coming on a visit, saw the scars and became furious. He shouted:

"If I lose caste or not, I'll not allow my child to be so treated," and took her away.

In Poona I visited a Brahmin family in company with Mrs. S. Stephens, M. D. The man was very kind to his little sixteen-year-old wife. When their first child was born, and it proved to be a girl, he said he would now have an opportunity of demonstrating the sincerity of his theories about female education. The Brahmin rule forbids a man to take his wife's hand or to kiss her until two weeks after a child is born, on pain of being called unclean. His own servants—Brahmins, of course—would in such event refuse to cook for him unless he first took a thorough bath. This man would tenderly kiss the little girl-wife before he left for business and submitted to re-

Digitized by Google

peated bathings so as not to go hungry. During Dr. Pentecost's meeting he was induced to come and hear the Gospel. The day after he attended the meeting he was taken ill. When we called there he had high fever. We talked a little to him. He said:

"Wasn't it strange that after I had heard one sermon I should be laid by like this? But God will do right. I am trusting myself to him."

He never rose from that fever. He wanted to write out his will regarding his wife—how she should be treated—as he abhorred the custom of ill-treating widows. Of course, he could not leave her any property or place her in an independent position, as all the property was held jointly by the brothers; still it is probable that had he written his desire to have her placed in Ramabai's care to be educated, his brothers might have respected his wish. But pen and paper were refused him and no one would write for him. When Ramabai heard of his death, she said:

"Poor Mrs. Kirteney! His parents are orthodox Hindus; the property was joint; she is at the mercy of the household."

It is hard to realize the utter helplessness of the Hindu widow. Many stories could be written by those who go about in high-caste homes and see the poor shaven heads and the little figures hiding in corners or behind doors. I always single them out for kind words and notice, but they are almost too timid to respond. They think it a favor if someone is kind enough to motion them to leave their drudgery and listen to the hymns we sing and which the women love

Digitized by Google

so much to hear. Before I knew much about the widow's lot I used ignorantly to ask in regard to one of these crouching, timid figures: "Who is that?" No one ever told me her name or relationship. Simply pointing the thumb over the shoulder (she was sure to be in the background) and giving a contemptuous jerk of the chin, the answer was: "Only a widow."

One dear little girl in Ramabai's school received word that as she was now twelve years old, it was time for her to break off her little armlets and have her head shaved. She must come home for these degrading things to be done and the father thought they wuold keep her at home to wash and cook and scrub. The child was nearly frantic. Every time she heard wheels she would run and hide. She begged not to be sent back, but Ramabai was powerless. But the father never came for the child. In Ramabai's words: "He meant to come and take her back to misery, but he died." The child was overjoyed at the news.

Do not read all this about the baby and girl-widows and think of it as a far-away story of a far-away, unreal land, but picture your own golden or brown-haired darling as one of these widows in India. Little children, two million of them, crying to be delivered from the curse implied in that word, *"widow!"*

PUNDITA RAMABAI, THE WIDOWS' CHAMPION.

When we came to India, ten years ago, one of the pleasures to which I looked forward was meeting the little Christian woman, once a Brahmin widow, who had done so much for her afflicted Indian sisters, suf-

Digitized by Google

fering under the curse of enforced widowhood. Having read of her life and work I hoped I might be privileged to meet her in India. Our first two years were spent in Poona, where is situated the Sharada Sadan (home for widows) which Ramabai had founded, and it was our privilege not only to meet this wonderful woman, but to become her warm friends. It was in her home that we first saw Indian living, and here we took our earliest lessons in the difficult operation of eating with our fingers and becoming acquainted with the hot dishes which the people of Hindustan delight in.

In those days, 1891, the Sharada Sadan was in rented quarters, but on July 26 of that year the beautiful block of buildings in which it now is was dedicated to the noble work of rescuing and educating Hindu widows. At the opening of the new premises there were forty inmates of the home. Of these a goodly number were orthodox Hindus, keeping caste-rules and observances. The cooking arrangements were made so as to accommodate those who clung to the Hindu religion and observed its forms. Entire freedom in religious matters was accorded to all. The school and home for widows was not to be a mission school, as by making it so Ramabai knew she would be shutting out some, or rather most, of the very class she wished to help. One of the rules to which she rigidly adhered was that lecturers on various topics were to say nothing irreverent or slighting of any religion or sacred custom.

This liberality led many Christian people and even

Digitized by Google

missionaries to doubt Ramabai's Christianity, as they could not understand her motives. She left all free. The Bible, the Hindu Shastras and the Mohammedan Koran were all accessible in the library; yet at the same time no symbols of idol-worship were allowed in the school or on the premises. At one time her advisory Hindu committee, which has since been abolished, urged her to place a *tulsi* plant on the front veranda to be worshiped by the Hindu girls. Sooner than submit to this and other innovations, she was ready to resign her position as principal of the Sharada Sadan, the very apple of her eye and the object for which she lived.

While all were left free, yet the strong personal influence of "Bai," as the girls call the Pundita, won many to seek the same experience, they saw her to possess, and these seekers she lovingly instructed in Bible knowledge. This again caused her Hindu friends to misjudge her and accuse her of compelling the girls to become Christians, so that on both sides her part was a difficult one.

At one time I remained in the Sharada Sadan as a guest for two months on account of my child's ill-health, and while there was deeply impressed with the spirit pervading the home. Ramabai was a real mother to the girls, and for their failures and shortcomings felt all a mother's solicitude. One night I was up with my sick child and went out into the garden with the little one for coolness. While walking there I saw on the high, terraced roof of the other house a figure in pure white pacing back and forth and standing still at

Digitized by Google

intervals, and I wondered what the sight could mean. The next day I learned from an inmate of the home that Rai had remained up there in the stillness all night to pray for a troublesome girl. The strong faith and devotion of this Indian sister is a rebuke to many who have known the religion of Christ from infancy. She showed me a small idol, which, at the age of twenty-one, she was in the habit of worshiping. She was thoroughly versed in the sacred books or Vedas. Yet in less than twenty-one years she had attained to such a marvelous Christian experience and been made so useful in working for others!

Her acceptance of the Christian religion, or rather of Christ himself, was a gradual one. A personal letter, quoted some years ago in a paper published in India, shows very clearly the steps by which she has been led along from a philosophic belief in the Bible, as containing the best religion, to a vital faith in Jesus Christ. These are her words:

> I simply believed that God would save me if I repented of my sins; that it was to declare his readiness to forgive all sins of those who repented that God sent Christ into this world. So here I was, a professed Christian, but not converted, as I understand the word now. I had repented and was continually asking God to forgive my sins; but the great burden remained on my heart, just as it had been there before I was baptized. I gave up reading theological books and betook myself to the Bible. I was still going on with my old belief, when some time ago it pleased God to draw me nearer to him by bringing a great affliction on me. In this I recognized the hand of the loving Father and began more and more to cast all my cares upon him, instead of trusting in my own strength and human friends;

Digitized by Google

but the difficulties were staring me in the face just as they did the lawyer in the tenth chapter of Luke. One very hot night, made hotter by the struggle that was going on within me, I opened the Bible and found this promise: "For a small moment have I forsaken thee; but with great mercies will I gather thee." My soul began to realize its utter helplessness and misery, the many failures of best intentions and resolutions. I fully understood that I could not help myself, so I set aside all my doubts and resolved to take the Lord at his word. I surrendered to him, trusting that he would do what was right by me. Since then a great burden is taken away from my heart and almost all my doubts have gone. The old Vedantic philosophy had so much occupied my mind that there was little room for anything else. According to it, God is a being who has neither sorrow nor joy. The pure essence of God cannot suffer, cannot feel for man. I had already believed John iii:16, but my difficulty was not removed. One night, as I was returning home, it suddenly dawned on me that our God is a God of love. God is love itself. He is not the passive being of the Vedanta who cannot feel for man. It is therefore most natural for God to sympathize with man and come to his help in his sore need. I feel very happy over this, and thank God with all my heart that he sent Jesus Christ to save me by taking my sins away.

This letter, however, while clear and beautiful, does not fully portray the deep reality of Ramabai's spiritual life—the childlike faith and the robust, yet simple working out of her belief amid the perplexities of her position.

One of her most noticeable traits is her indifference to public notice and applause. She goes on quietly with her work of rescue and love, seldom attending large assemblies or public gatherings, unless by so do-

Digitized by Google

ing she can forward the work she loves. At the Decennial Conference of Missionaries, held in Bombay in 1892, Ramabai was announced to address a large meeting. Hundreds of missionaries of all denominations were anxious to see and hear this apostle of female education and reform; but Ramabai did not come. One of her beloved "girls" was taken very ill, and, like a tender mother, she remained by the bedside. Many very devoted missionaries would have left the child in the care of a trustworthy assistant and been present themselves at the meeting to give and receive help and inspiration. One of her children was ill; she could not leave. There was no thought of applause nor honor; only, the anxiety of a mother.

Her work has now grown to marvelous proportions. The school for widows in Poona continues; but, when the famine of 1896-97 desolated India, Ramabai stretched forth her hands to save three hundred women and girls. This she accomplished. She herself had known famine and had subsisted for days upon leaves of trees; so her whole heart went out to rescue and to save. The means were always forthcoming and a settlement was started at Khedgaon, a small village outside of Poona. Here farming was carried on and the girls and women were taught and employed. Then came the famine of 1900, and the numbers at Mukti, as the settlement is called, increased, until now Ramabai's family of girls and widows numbers nineteen hundred. Missionaries help her in holding services, and she has a noble band of workers; but her own hand is on everything and

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

PORTRAIT OF RAMABAI

GROUP OF CHILD WIDOWS

Digitized by Google

her presence felt everywhere. Out of this great company of homeless famine waifs will come teachers, wives of Christian men, and Christian nurses and servants.

Not less wonderful than her work is her own history, and, of course, the two are inseparably united. But for her early training she would have had no knowledge of Sanscrit; without it, she could not have obtained the position as lecturer and instructor in the Calcutta College, and afterwards in England as professor of Sanscrit in Cheltenham College, Oxford. To comprehend how Ramabai has obtained the scholarship which is hers, it is necessary to know something of the aspiration and thoughts of one of the advanced thinkers of India, for such undoubtedly was Ramabai's father. This man, Ananta Shastri, a Brahmin pundit, had in his student days met a very talented princess. His astonishment on hearing a woman recite Sanscrit poems made him resolve that his little child-wife should also become learned. To this her parents were opposed and he was never able to have his wish. After her death he met Ramabai's mother, then a little girl of nine. She and her parents and sister were on a religious pilgrimage, when they stopped at a certain town for a few days' rest. One day the little girl's father was bathing in the sacred Godaveri, when he saw a fine-looking man approaching. After the ablutions and prayers were finished the father asked the stranger his name and from whence he came. On learning his caste, clan and condition, he offered him his nine-year-old girl as a wife. The pundit saw the opportunity of

Digitized by Google

fulfilling his dream of having an educated wife and very gladly accepted the child. The next day the marriage was concluded and the father departed with a light heart, knowing nothing of his son-in-law, yet feeling that he had done the best possible for his young daughter in getting her properly married. She was tenderly cared for, but when her husband undertook her education, his mother raised a perfect storm of threats and pleadings. He was not to be baffled in his second attempt, so he took his girl-wife up into the Western Ghats, on a remote plateau, and there, literally in the jungle, he conducted the education of the little girl who afterwards became Ramabai's mother. She became proficient in the Vedas and in the knowledge of Sanscrit. Ramabai treasures still a manuscript book from which her mother taught her. When Ramabai was born, in 1858, her father was growing quite old and almost unable to teach the students who flocked to him. Ramabai's mother taught her almost entirely. When Ramabai was nine years old the family set out on a religious pilgrimage, as is the custom among many high-caste families. It was decided as a special favor to delay Ramabai's marriage until she was sixteen, as she was learning so rapidly.

During this pilgrimage both parents died, and the brother and sister prepared them for burial. Often during this time the family was almost reduced to starvation. When the parents died the brother and sister traveled throughout India, advocating female education. At Calcutta her scholarship attracted the notice of the pundits there, and she was publicly given

Digitized by Google

the title of Pundita Sarasvati. Here she was married, but after a brief, though happy wedded life, became a widow. This forcibly drew her attention to the unfortunate class of women and children in India who are perpetual widows. Her aim now was to reach England and America, in order to secure a better education in methods of teaching, and, if possible, help for her enterprise of founding a home for widows. For a time she was professor of Sanscrit in Cheltenham College, England. Here some friends came forward to help her, but her scheme was not fairly launched until she was met by the warmth of Western enthusiasm. American women received her as an equal and comrade. Soon, all over America, circles were formed called "Ramabai Circles," and an association organized which guaranteed support for ten years, by which time Ramabai hoped her own people would awake to the benefits of such an institution and would assist her in educating young widows. Many Hindus professed themselves friends of the cause, but Ramabai found that only among Christians was true charity a reality, and, since the dissolution of the association, such friends have poured into her hands the means for caring for her hundreds of dependent wards. Here, truly, is a work of faith, and she herself one of India's chosen ones.

Because of her diffidence, many do not know how much ability she possesses. Max Müller, the eminent Sanscrit scholar, cites her as having one of the most remarkable memories in the world—for a woman, the most remarkable. He invited some of his friends, pro-

Digitized by Google

fessors in the university, to meet her and test her memory, when she recited any part of the Rig Veda or Bhagavad-gita which they chose to select, and she could go on until they were tired. She knew by heart an amount equal to the contents of our entire Bible, and, now that she is a Christian, she studies the Bible with the same avidity with which she once pored over the ancient philosophies of India. Those old systems she finds hollow and empty, and the few beautiful things found in the books are almost nowhere carried into practice.

In speaking of her visit to Agra*, she says:

> I beg of my Western sisters not to be satisfied with looking on the outside beauty of the grand philosophies, nor to be charmed with hearing the long and interesting discourses of our educated men, but to open the trap-doors of the great monuments of ancient Hindu intellect and enter into the dark cellars where they will see the real workings of the philosophies which they admire so much. Let our Western friends come to India and live right among us. Let them frequently go to the hundreds of sacred places where countless pilgrims throng yearly. Let them go around Jaganath, Puri, Benares,† Gaya, Allahabad, Muttra, Brindaban, Dwarka, Pandhrapur, Udipi, Tirpatty and such other sacred cities, the strongholds of Hinduism and seats of sacred learning, where the Mahatmas and Sadhus dwell, and where the sublime philosophies are daily taught and devoutly followed. There are thousands of priests and men learned in sacred lore who are the spiritual rulers and guides of our people. They neglect and oppress the widows and devour widows' houses. I have gone to many

*See reference again in chapter on "Ancient Oudh."
†See chapter on Benares.

Digitized by Google

of the so-called sacred places, lived among the people and seen enough of those learned philosophers and possessors of superior Hindu spirituality who oppress the widows and trample the poor, ignorant, low-caste people under their heels. They have deprived the widows of their birthright to enjoy pure life and lawful happiness. They send out hundreds of emissaries to look for young widows and bring them by hundreds and thousands to the sacred cities to rob them of their money and their virtue. They entice the poor, ignorant women to leave their own homes to live in the *kshetras,* or holy places, and then, after robbing them of their belongings, tempt them to yield to their unholy desires. They shut the helpless young widows into their large *mathas,* or monasteries, sell or hire them out to wicked men so long as they can get money, and when the poor, miserable slaves are no longer pleasing to their cruel masters, they turn them out in the streets to beg their bread, to suffer the horrible consequences of sin, to carry the burden of shame, and finally to die the death worse than that of a starved street-dog. Those so-called sacred places, those veritable hells on earth, have become the graveyards of countless widows and orphans. Thousands upon thousands of young widows and innocent children are suffering untold misery and dying helpless every year throughout this land, but no philosopher or mahatma has come out boldly to champion their cause and to help them. The teachers of false philosophies and lifeless spiritualities will do no good to our people. Nothing has been done by them to protect the fatherless and judge the widows. If anything has been done by anybody at all, it has been done by those people who have come under the direct influence of Christianity.

This eloquent extract shows, not only the inner decay of Hinduism, but the acuteness of Ramabai's mind, as well as her nobility of character and her fearlessness.

Digitized by Google

TO PANDITA RAMABAI.

Did cry from Macedonia come
  And find quick answer to its needs?
And shall the ear be always dumb,
  And never foot be found to speed
To heavier sorrow, greater care,
  To India's widowhood, that mourns
And sits in ashes of despair?

Nay, God hath heard, and from the skies
  A gleam of hope! For, strong to save,
From out those widowed ranks, see rise
  A noble soul, full strong and brave
To dare hard custom, and whose heart
  Is daunted not by fear or pain.
Her faith looks up. She does her part,
  She feels she shall not plead in vain.

So over seas to unknown lands,
  To unknown hearts she takes her cause,
Her cause—to loose from heavy bands;
  To free from custom's iron laws
A sisterhood of helpless ones;
  Of those whom grief alone had nursed;
To open Life's and Learning's fount
  To those whose lives were thought accursed.

And hearts were opened everywhere;
  Were opened wide to India's need.
The thought of childhood's face of care,
  The thought of cheerless widowhood,
Found in those hearts responsive chime,
  Where love of God is linked with love
For stricken ones of every clime.

So from the gifts of many a friend
  Who gave for needs so far away,
Has grown this house which soon shall send
  Into this Empire's gloom a ray—

Digitized by Google

Nay, more!—a beam of heavenly light!
And India's millions yet shall say:
"From out our curse, our grief, our blight,
Has come our help, our hope, our stay."

So here, to-day, with heart and voice,
We people of such various race
Unite as one to say: "Rejoice!
Rejoice that in this goodly place
We see the fruits of toil and love!
Rejoice that here in learning's path
So many feet may learn to tread!
Rejoice to know the good begun
Shall still go on when we are dead!"

Brave Ramabai, may all things fair
And all things pure be always thine!
Yea, they are thine; for, dwelling where
Self and self-seeking do not come,
Seeking the good of others, balm
Unto thine own soul shall be given;
Mother to many, thou shalt know
While still on earth some joy of Heaven.

Poona, July 26, 1892.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VI.

STORIES OF LITTLE GIRLS.

Fatima's parents are Mohammedans and believe in keeping women and girls like prisoners. Fatima's mother can never go out shopping as English ladies do, never pay calls or see the birds, the sunshine or the flowers. Day after day, week after week and year after year she stays in the house or goes into the little back yard surrounded by a high brick wall. She cannot even enjoy a drive in the open air. When she goes anywhere in the ox-cart, which is very seldom, the bamboo top of the cart is covered with blankets and she can see very little as she passes along. Fatima, until lately, knew very little of her mother's sad life. She ran about the front veranda and on the streets with her brothers and had a merry time. Even in India children make mud-pies or rather *chapatties,* and play their little games. So Fatima was merry and free for a short time, something like the dear happy little ones in Christian lands. But how quickly her glad days ended! Her seventh birthday came and instead of a nice birthday party and pretty presents on that day, poor Fatima's sorrows began. On the morning of that day her strict Mohammedan father said to the poor mother: "Now, Fatima is seven years old, and she must begin to keep *purdah.*" This means that she must always stay in the back part of the house or walk

Digitized by Google

about the bare little yard with the high walls. She can never look out of the front doors or windows, never run into the front veranda or go and see the shops in the bazaar as she used to do with her brothers. A veritable prisoner! Fatima's mother cried and pleaded in vain. "Oh! she is so little yet," she said, "don't keep her in *purdah* so soon. She will almost forget how the flowers and trees look by the time she grows up. Besides, she will forget and run out."

Then the father flew into a great rage and said: "It is better never to let a woman out of the house! The Koran says that the best kind of women are those who never remember seeing any man but their own husbands and sons, and the next best those who have only seen near relatives. You would like our daughter to be totally bad and see all the men in town. She will stay in from this day and you shall watch and see that she does *not* go out."

Of course, as the mother had said, Fatima would forget the cruel order, and, seeing her brothers rush out, she would start too. Then her mother would call: "Fatima, Fatima, remember the order," and the poor child would sit down and cry as if her heart would break.

Her mother said to me, "Oh! I am so glad that my two other little girls died. Here this poor child must sit down with us women until she is twelve years old. Then she will be married and her husband will keep her shut up the rest of her life." The mother's heart ached for her, but she could do nothing to help poor little black-eyed Fatima.

Digitized by Google

Now here is Tara. Her name means a "star," but her life is not a bright one. She is a Brahmin child and as yet is allowed to run about and play. But her mind is going to waste. When we asked her father if we might teach her something, he said:

"Why teach her to read? She must cook all her life. Besides, Tara is engaged to be married. She is ten years old and the order has been given for her wedding-jewels to be made. Soon we shall take her to her mother-in-law's house and she will be trained there. If the child knew how to read her mother-in-law would think we were making a bad woman of her. Cows don't read and women are not as good as cows."

Soon little Tara will go to Lucknow to be married. She will never see any happy school-days, never be that bright and lovely being, a fair young girl in her parents' home. In India there is an absence of young girls with their charming ways. Only children and married women. These two little girls I know quite well.

Now I will tell you of a young bride that my husband saw. She was a girl of about fourteen. Probably she had been given in marriage long before and was now going to her husband's home.

The wedding procession looked very gay. The horses were decked with bells, silver and gold tinsel, embroidery and bright-red and purple cloths over the saddle. My husband stopped to look at the bridal party passing. The groom—alas! was forty or forty-five years old and was dressed very gaily. Behind him came the little bride on a pony. She wore beautiful

Digitized by Google

clothes and a profusion of gold and silver jewelry. But the pretty face was bowed on the pony's neck, and, above the noise of the clashing cymbals and the various other musical instruments, rose the heartrending wail of this poor, unwilling little bride, going to the house of the stern, silent man riding in front. What happiness can be in store for such a home?

The fourth child I know as well as the first two—Gungi, a little Brahmin girl. She was married when a mere baby and at seven years old became a widow. She had never seen the middle-aged man who gave her parents a sum of rupees to seal the marriage bargain. She did not know what *widow* meant, but she soon learned to understand cruelty and semi-starvation. The husband's relatives housed and half-fed the poor baby widow. "How wicked she must have been in a former life," they would say. "Who knows? She may have been a snake. and now her sins have killed her husband." For four years she endured their wicked treatment and then she was saved by a loving Christian woman, and is now in a happy home, free from cruel blows and cruel words. When in this home for little more than a year, she composed a poem about her lot while still a widow. This little poem I have translated into English as literally as I could. Here it is:

SONG OF THE HINDU WIDOW.

Come, oh come, God, my only friend,
My heart is heavy within me;
None to my sorrow an ear will lend,
I am a widow! Oh, set me free!

Digitized by Google

Life's path I've trod but a little way,
  But my load is too heavy to bear;
The light of gladness has fled away,
  And wet with tears the garments I wear.

I'm a little child, yet none will save.
  When five years old betrothed to age,
To age with one foot touching the grave,
  Yet when he dies, the family rage.

The family storm and curse and swear
  The little wife has caused his death!
How shall I tell how widows fare?
  O God, I have not power nor breath.

Sold into bondage, a helpless slave!
  One hundred rupees! The paltry sum
My parents took, the old man gave,
  And I was his, what'er might come!

And oh! the sorrows when he died!
  The blows and words as hard as blows,
E'en red-hot iron their hands applied;
  The scars my injured body shows.

If we commit through youth or fear,
  The smallest fault, we plead in vain;
We know full well a storm is near
  And on our backs sticks fall like rain.

And bad words thunder in our ears.
  My feet the widow's thorny way
Had found when only seven years
  Of my short life had passed away.

When but eleven, from my head
  They shaved the soft, dark locks of hair.
They counted me as with the dead;
  The dead! I wish that I were there.

Digitized by Google

Yes, with the dead I long to be.
There, surely, I'll find rest and peace.
Come, oh my God! and set me free;
In death's cold arms give me release.

The story of four little girls—the little Mohammedan prisoner, the ignorant little betrothed Brahmin, the weeping bride and the desolate baby widow! As your hearts yearn for them remember there are many Fatimas behind the *purdah;* many ignorant betrothed children like Tara; many weeping brides and more than twenty-two million widows in India!

RUNABAI.

Like all girls of the better classes, or higher castes in India, little Runabai was married when but a child. In these marriages the parents make all the arrangements, and very often the little girl or boy does not even know what is being done. There are great ceremonies which mean that the children are promised to each other in marriage when they are grown up. One little girl, who was a relative of Runabai's, was married when she was in her cradle. The costly *saris,* or wedding-clothes, were hung around the sides of the cradle where the little baby was sleeping and jewels were placed around her tiny, unconscious face. After the ceremonies were over these gifts were laid aside for the little bride when she should be old enough to go to the new home.

Runabai's marriage was similar to this. Little did she realize as she was toddling about the beautiful rooms of her father's bungalow that her whole life was determined for her. The bungalow, as fine houses are

Digitized by Google

called in India, was a very nice one, and lovely plants adorned the verandas and compound. All about were signs of comfort and luxury. Her parents loved her, although they were very sorry that she was not a boy. People in India are always sorry to have little girls and often they will try to hide the fact.

One day a missionary was sitting and talking in the home of a Hindu gentleman. During the conversation the missionary asked, "How many children have you?" "Three," the gentleman replied, and he called in and showed his visitor the three fine little boys of whom he was so proud. A short time after this a pretty, bright-eyed little girl came into the room and climbed upon the knee of the gentleman. "And who is this?" asked the missionary. "My daughter," replied the Hindu in evident vexation, and he would say no more.

But our little Runabai was an affectionate child and, while in her own home, she did not realize that she was not welcome. A few years of happiness were soon over; for when she was only eleven years of age the parents of her boy-husband, whom she had never seen and of whom she knew nothing, sent for her. They wished to train her up properly for their son. This is the usual fate of Hindu girls—to be torn from their mothers and given over to the care of strangers. Little appreciated in her own family, you can imagine the very sad lot a child must have among those who care very much less for her than her parents do. The least fault is severely corrected for fear her sins may cause the death of the precious and idolized son of the family.

Digitized by Google

When Runabai was sent for, her father bought her many rich *saris* or garments and fine jewels and sent her away with twelve hand-maidens who were to wait upon her in the wealthy home of her husband. But alas! for some reason the little wife failed to please her new relatives. Her maids were taken from her almost immediately, and she herself was compelled to work much too hard for her years. They put away the nice silk and muslin *saris* and most of her pretty bracelets and other jewelry. Nothing the child did seemed to please anyone in the family, and her life grew harder and harder. It appeared as though they wished to get rid of her and so be able to procure another wife for the son.

Before a year had gone by her food was limited to one meal a day and that only of rice and chillies (red peppers). She became very thin and looked like a shadow of the bright little girl who came so gaily to this home so short a time before.

One sad day, as she was cleaning the house, she saw some bread on a table. Her hunger was even greater than her fear, and, snatching up a piece, she ran off to eat it. Her cruel mother-in-law saw her, and, picking up a stick, ran after the poor girl. She took the bread from the trembling fingers and pushed it down poor Runabai's throat with the stick. The suffering of the child was terrible. When she next visited her own father's house, she begged not to be sent back any more to be so cruelly treated. "But oh! the disgrace to our family!" the father said.

Digitized by Google

"No, go back, dear Runabai, we weep for you and our hearts are pained over your sad lot. When we sit down to our good food, we shed tears as we think of our poor, starving Runabai. But what can we do? If we keep you here our caste will be broken and the gods will be displeased. Go back, and if you die, it will be honorable." So the little martyr to caste and false religion went back and in two months more was dead.

Do not think this is an imaginary tale. All the facts were given me by an educated Christian woman of India. I myself have known similar acts of cruelty, even to branding with a hot iron. The real selfishness and cruelty of heathenism can scarcely be fathomed. Even the kinder people tolerate things like these without raising a protest. The very love lavished on some has its real root in selfishness. In Christian lands there is a little couplet showing how very near to the parents' heart is the loving daughter. It runs:

> A son is a son, till he gets him a wife;
> A daughter's a daughter the whole of her life.

This might be changed in India to—

> A daughter is a daughter until sold for a wife,
> But a son will support us the whole of our life.

For it is this consideration essentially that gives the value to sons. They will, according to custom, feed and care for the parents. How often this merciful usage is disregarded it is impossible to say, for many a case of neglect and even cruelty to old and feeble parents has come under our own observation. The rule,

Digitized by Google

however, is for sons to shelter and feed the aged parents. The belief about funeral obsequies also makes sons to be desired, for it is only they who can perform these duties for the father. So anxious are the parents for their sons also to have sons that it is known that they will sometimes try to get an unwelcome or barren wife out of the way so that they can choose a better one for the son. This may have been the motive in Runabai's case.

ONE LITTLE WIDOW.

Seven years a widow and then only eleven years old! Widowed at four years of age! How incredible such a thing sounds, and yet we know there is a land where little children are made widows before they even know the right hand from the left. In Christian lands a widow's sad lot is softened by sympathy of friends, the sparkle and joy of existence may be gone, but there is much to live for and a useful life is still before even a young woman. But the shadow—nay, the curse of widowhood has hung over little Sita ever since she remembered anything. When suffering neglect and cruelty, the little brown girl often wondered why other little girls living near her had such happy, merry times, while she knew only drudgery and ill-treatment from morning until night.

One day, when six of these weary years had passed and Sita was then ten years of age, she found out what widow meant. Then, added to the cruelties she already endured, was added the terror of woes to come. The day on which this knowledge came to her she

Digitized by Google

had gone, as usual, in her tattered garments and with three large brass water-pots on her head, to the great open well from which she drew the daily supply of water for a family of nine people. She was so tired and her frail little back ached so that she sat down on a huge stone to rest a minute before letting down one of the many buckets which all day long were going up and down in obedience to the many demands for water. As she sat there with her bare, olive-skinned arms and feet shining in the warm sun and resting her weary head on one thin little hand, she was a picture of childish woe. Her faded old *sari* had fallen back from her head, disclosing the bare little scalp, for in token of the deep disgrace of widowhood the soft, dark tresses of hair had been shaved off and the hot sun beat down on the small, naked head. Many sorrows had fallen on the childish heart, but Sita was still a child. Her heart yearned for companionship and love. Many Brahmin servants were drawing water near her, singing little *bhajans,* or songs, and looking quite bright and happy in their gay-colored cotton *saris.* A woman, poor, so that she must draw her own drinking-water, but a Brahmin, came near to Sita and the child looked up and appealed to her for help:

"Will you not draw a little water for me? I feel tired and ill, and the well is very deep."

The woman turned angrily and uttered, in a scathing tone, the word "Widow!" Then she burst out: "Curse you, how dare you come between me and the glorious sun? Your shadow has fallen upon me and

Digitized by Google

I'll have to take the bath of purification before I can eat food! Curse you, stand aside!"

Poor Sita stands bewildered. She has never asked help before of anyone. Too crushed and stupefied to realize her forlorn condition, she has only existed and gone through the drudgery with scarce a gentle word from anyone. This abuse seems to arouse a little curiosity in the child, but she does not answer the woman. Tears course down her cheeks. Something akin to pity makes the woman pause, and, halting at a safe distance from Sita's shadow, she continues to talk to her in a milder tone. She is thinking, perhaps, of two soft-eyed little daughters, who are very dear to this proud woman's heart, though she mourned bitterly at the time of their birth, because the gods denied her sons.

Looking again at Sita, she says: "Why should I help you, when the gods have cursed you? See, you are a widow."

Then, in answer to Sita's vacant gaze she continues:

"Don't you understand? Didn't you have a husband once?"

"Yes, I think so," Sita answered; "that old, bad man who used to shake me and tell me to grow up quickly and work for him. Perhaps he was my husband. When he died they said I killed him, but I did not. I was glad he was dead, though," said the sad little thing.

"So you call him bad?" the woman said. "Ah! no wonder the gods hate you. No doubt you were very

Digitized by Google

wicked ages ago and so now you are made a widow. By and by you will be a snake or a toad," and, gathering up her water-pots, the woman went away.

The slender, ill-fed little frame gathered itself up and the child hurriedly filled the brass vessels, knowing that abuse awaited her late return. Putting a small bundle of cloth on her head, she raised the huge jars to their place and hastened to her house, since a *home* she never knew. The sister-in-law met the little thing with violent abuse and bade her prepare the morning meal quickly. The child was ill and nearly fell with fatigue.

"I'll show you how to wake up," the woman cried, and seizing a hot poker she laid it on the arms and hands of the child.* Screaming with pain, the poor creature worked on, trembling if the sister-in-law even looked at her.

This was one day. Each of the seven lengthened years contained three hundred and sixty-five similar days, save that now they were growing worse. The last year the child's head had been shaved. When that has been done, but one meal a day is permitted the widow, no matter how hard she may work. Most of the little girls who saw Sita would run from her, fearing pollution. But there was one little girl, who, like a gleam of sunshine, shone on Sita whenever she saw her. One day after the woman at the well had abused the young widow, Sita found a chance to tell Tungi

*I have known personally several cases of similar branding, with a hot iron, for trivial faults.

Digitized by Google

about it. Tungi's answer comforted the forlorn child somewhat.

"No," Tungi said, "there is a better God than that. Our people do not know about him, and that is why I am not allowed to talk with you. I am married and my husband lives in a distant city. If I speak to you, they believe he will die. But in the school where I go, many do not believe these things."

"How can you go to school? My sister-in-law says that only bad women learn to read," Sita answered.

"So my mother used to think," said Tungi; "but my husband is in school and he has sent word that I shall go also until he calls for me to come to his home. Then he will have a wife who can understand when he talks about his books. He says the English have happy families and it is this which makes them so. The wives know books and how to sing and how to make the house pleasant. My mother says it is all very bad, but he is my husband and so I must go to the school. I am very glad, for it is very pleasant there, the lessons and all, but most of all the singing."

So the little bright-eyed Brahmin wife chatted away, as gay as a bird. The fount of knowledge was opened to her—the beaming eye, the elastic figure and the individuality of her Western sisters were becoming hers.

None of these things seemed for Sita. After Tungi went to school the little shaven-headed child, subsisting on one poor meal a day, went about sad and lonely for another weary nine months. When she again saw

Digitized by Google

the bright face of her little friend, her condition had grown worse. Her neck and arms were full of scars where bits of flesh had been pinched out in the vindictive rage of her relatives, who believed the child guilty of her husband's death. Brutality growing with use had made them callous to the sufferings of the little being in their power. No one who cared knew of the pangs of hunger, the unkind and violent words and the threats of future punishments. Once or twice she had looked down into the cool depths of the well and wondered how quickly she could die. Only the terror of punishment after death kept this baby-widow from suicide. She had heard many things lately, and she knew of a young and lovely wife near by who had become a widow, lost her little son and, unable to endure the cruelties and her wounded pride, had stilled them all beneath the quiet waters of the well. Another widow, too, Sita had grown to know—an old woman, bent and wrinkled, neglected, care-worn and toiling, who was a terror to Sita because of what she foreshadowed to the child.

One day as Sita was weeping by the gateway of Tungi's home, the little child-wife told the child-widow of a safe refuge for such as she, where neither ignorance nor poverty could exclude her—a home under the loving care of one who knew the widow's curse. After many difficulties Sita found this shelter. Here she forgot her widowhood and found her childhood and girlhood. Here, in the beautiful garden, or at her lessons, helping with cooking, or leaning lovingly on the

Digitized by Google

arm of "Bai's" chair, the blessed genius of the home, she passed away many sweet and useful years. By and by Sita found the greatest joy in love—higher and better than human love can ever be. Later, when a beautiful young womanhood had crowned her, she was sought by an earnest, enlightened young Christian as his wife.

Many of the millions of child-widows never find release from the bonds of cruel custom and false religion. In Hinduism there is no hope for the accursed widow.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VII.

UP COUNTRY.

Bombay people always speak of the stations north on the G. I. P. Railway as up-country, or *Mofussil* stations. The merchants call their patrons from the same region up-country, or *Mofussil* customers. Some of these places are beautiful rural villages and many are large cities, like Jubbulpore, Allahabad and Lucknow. Even in the large cities you will find beautiful drives and most of the houses are surrounded by pleasant gardens and some by extensive grounds, called compounds. In the cool season tourists find these places delightful, and are often quite at a loss to understand why it is considered a cross to live in India. If they would prolong their stay through April, May, June and July, they would be enlightened. While in Bombay, Madras or Calcutta you never have the invigorating cool weather that we enjoy in Central and Northern India, yet at the same time you do not suffer from the scorching heat and hot winds that are the other extreme in the up-country stations. November, December, January and February, in the northern part of the Central Provinces and in North India, are simply delightful months. Sometimes we even have a white frost to remind us of the homeland. During January the *malis,* or gardeners, try to keep a brush-fire burning in the gardens, for there being little or no

Digitized by Google

wind, the smoke hangs low over the vegetables and fruits and protects them from danger of frost.

In the smaller up-country places the society consists of a few English officials and the missionaries. In some cities there is a large number of Europeans—as in Jubbulpore. The European community forms a town by itself, quite separate from the native city. In a number of stations there are huge barracks for the English soldiers, who are so plentifully scattered over India. A few missionaries are in very lonely spots, where often they do not see a white face for months at a time. Others are in stations where they have no social enjoyments or privileges, even though there may be English officials there. The majority, however, have some society and, in most cases, the English officials are very cordial with American as well as with English missionaries and help in no small degree to dispel the loneliness of the quiet country life. The work, however, often makes even these opportunities unavailable. Very few of the up-country missionaries can by any possibility secure more than one evening in a week to be given to social or family intercourse. There is the bazaar-preaching at about half-past four in the afternoon, which comes two or three times a week, and the *mohulla* preaching, which is later, to meet the laboring people, who are not at home until late at night, besides meetings for the native Christians on other evenings. During the cold season most missionaries live in tents, traveling from village to village preaching the gospel.

Digitized by Google

Many of them stay out until April, when the awful heat drives them into bungalows, as European dwellings are called. These houses are built to exclude the heat and have very thick walls, very often built of mud and sun-dried bricks. Where the heat is greatest, thatched roofs are common. Although very comfortable during the hot season, these are anything but handsome, making the house look like huge straw beehives, similar to those seen in old-fashioned pictures. By 8 o'clock, or earlier, in the morning, the house is all tightly closed, except those doors which are furnished with "kuss-kuss" chicks. These chicks are really huge outside doors made of a root called "kuss-kuss," which is fragrant when moist. Coolie women are employed to pour water upon them, so that air entering the house through the kuss-kuss will cool the atmosphere inside. When it is 114° F. outside, these chicks reduce the temperature immediately in front of the chicks to 86° F., which is endurable. In places where there is very little wind a machine called a thermantidote is used. This is a fan-like device enclosed in such a way that all the breeze produced by turning a crank is thrown upon and through the kuss-kuss chick, thereby causing more evaporation of the moisture and a corresponding reduction of the temperature inside. In our study we had a temperature of 82°, while outside the thermometer, in the shade, stood at 114°.

Now comes one of the sorest trials of the missionary's life. Not endurance of the heat or one's own health failing can compare with the sorrow of seeing one's little ones droop and fade. Day after day the

Digitized by Google

MISSION BUNGALOW WITH THATCHED ROOF, NARSINGHPUR, INDIA.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

huge *punkahs* (ceiling fans) swing back and forth and, in the darkened rooms, the children play, growing paler and paler. In the very early mornings and in the evenings they go out for a drive in the bullock tonga or other conveyance or, if older, for a walk; but one sees their health and vigor diminishing every day. At night all the beds are carried out into the compound and, if the weather is clear, with the starry sky for our canopy and the beautiful trees for our walls, we can sleep fairly well. Some of us get moon-headaches and have to fasten umbrellas to the head of our light cots to keep off the intensely bright moonlight of the tropics. How vivid we realize the expression: "The sun shall not smite thee by day, nor the moon by night."

So April and May drag their heated lengths along and—oh! how we sigh for the rains to begin. Then the clouds come, sometimes a fortnight before a drop of rain falls. The hot, stifling clouds hang like smothering blankets over the earth, and sleep, even outdoors, is out of the question. Many a night I have walked around the house for hours in a thin white wrapper, feeling as though every breath would stifle me, and utterly unable to sleep until quite tired out with exercise. Within the last few years we have erected a framework on which a *punkah* is swung, pulled by relays of coolie women, who sit far off in the compound at the end of the rope.

You may wonder how these women endure the heat. They belong to the millions of poor low-caste people in India, and in comparison with such work as

Digitized by Google

carrying bricks in the scorching sun, they find *punkah*-pulling for half a night or day in a shaded veranda an easy task. We cannot remake all the conditions of life in India. We only know in the hot season that we are strangers and foreigners, barely able to exist under *punkahs,* with all other ameliorations available. Many missionaries, however, come to endure the heat fairly well and, during the famine, when so many were superintending relief work, the men were out for hours in the almost intolerable temperature. Then the rains begin. In many sections the air does not become pleasant for a long time; for, whenever the rains stop, it is steamy or, as we say in India, "very stuffy."

Now the effects of the continued heat become manifest. Fever lays hold on the children. Days of anxiety follow, often terminating in bereavement. To see a dear little one suffer because of the climate is one of the heaviest crosses of the missionary. We are told, of course, of the English officials who come to India willingly, but the difference in salaries, which makes so many other differences possible, is not mentioned. The children can be taken to the hills, ice is obtained from some large city and kuss-kuss chicks are in all the doors instead of in one or two. These comforts accompany the officers and their families on tours, not to mention the frequent trips to England, which invigorate the little ones.

Some parts of the country are cultivated by means of a simple system of irrigation and the vegetable gardens must be watered all the year round except in the three months of the rainy season. One of the discom-

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

INDIAN BUFFALOES BATHING

A HINDU STREET SCENE

Digitized by Google

forts pertaining to the hot season and the earlier times of the rains, is the scarcity of fruit and vegetables in all the smaller places. Without these the liver will not perform its office in the heat, and fever results. Here again the difference in salary is important, for with a full purse you can purchase from Bombay, Calcutta or some other large city where fruit is obtainable.

In the cold season everything seems pleasant. The weather is delightful. Guavas come in abundance from Allahabad, the place where the finest ones grow. Later, the luscious Nagpur oranges are to be had, while the merchants from Kabul come down with camel caravans and sell dried fruits, dates, raisins, figs, apricots, fresh nuts, almonds, pistachio nuts, kaju nuts and walnuts. At this season vegetables are plentiful, and good beef can be procured. The housewives busy themselves concocting roselle jelly, which is made from a flower, and much guava jelly and guava cheese, besides orange marmalade, lime pickle, etc., in preparation for the dearth of the hot season. The mangoes come in May, when it is hot, but very few that are eatable can be obtained in Central India. From these, when half-ripe, chutneys and preserves are prepared.

The corunder, a fruit something like the gooseberry, ripens during the cold season. Many ladies, when preparing dainties or preserving fruits which they do not wish to trust to servants, cook over charcoal fires in a queer little bucket-shaped contrivance called a *seegree*. Some have a cook stove in a sheltered veranda, and a few are the fortunate possessors of oil-gas stoves.

Digitized by Google

The cookhouse is entirely away from the house proper, to prevent the heat, odor of cooking and smoke from passing through the bungalow. Almost every door, outside and inside, is kept open, except in the *hottest* season.

Six or eight servants will do the work usually done by one in England or America, and that number will receive about the same pay as the one in the homeland. The people are not accustomed to working hard, and wages are low. With proper oversight and care about the food, teaching new dishes—in fact, good housekeeping—you can have the work done fairly well, leaving the missionary's wife free to teach in the zenanas, for correspondence connected with the work, and, in many places where there are no schools, for the instruction of her own children.

At best, however, life in India partakes of the artificial. The children must be taken to the hills in the hot seasons if possible. The husband must work on alone. Then, by and by, when the health and education of the boys and girls demand it, comes the inevitable separation of parents and children. A settled home-life, such as we know in England and America, cannot be maintained without many interruptions. Yet, strangeness has its fascination, and many people prefer living in India, while in the case of missionaries the work for and among the people grows to be their life-purpose and interest. The homeland, though enshrined in memory with all its dear associations, still fades and fades away. The one or two furloughs granted are in reality furloughs only, or visits, and

Digitized by Google

India becomes our home. We are exotics, it is true, but we have taken root. Here we must live and grow, howbeit our life-span is undoubtedly shortened and the burden of millions around us is never lifted from our hearts.

INSECT AND OTHER PESTS.

In the large cities, especially on the coasts, insects do not flourish as they do in the country places, particularly where the heat is very intense part of the year. In Bombay the crow is one of the most annoying pests, although the swarms of these black creatures are considered great scavengers. The crow is everywhere in great numbers. In the country hawks and kites are very numerous and a great menace to the poultry.

In many places scorpions are plentiful, and little children are in great danger from their stings. A child of a missionary died in convulsions in the old bungalow at Narsinghpur from the sting of one which was found in its cap. We ourselves killed one hundred and twenty-five the first year we lived in that house. Its grass roof is a fine shelter for them, as also for rats, gophers and, worst of all, for the destructive white ants. This and many similar houses are eaten through and through by these annoying pests. The walls of many of the older European buildings in India are built of sun-dried brick and mud, but offer no resistance to the attacks of these *demucks,* as the natives call them. They are as small as ordinary ants, but quite white, while the queen is as long as a little finger. Scarcely anything, wood, leather, cloth, paper, is safe. Sometimes they build little tunnels of mud from the

Digitized by Google

wall to a chest or cupboard and, before one is aware, the contents are riddled. A case of fine books may be destroyed in a short time.

In native houses of the poorer sort, the bedbug reigns and it requires great care to keep them out of European homes, as the native servants are very apt to carry them on their clothes. During the rains a variety of this insect with wings may descend upon a group on the veranda and cause consternation and flight. Moths, crickets and silver-fish are a constant menace to clothing, but these all fade into insignificance when we have to guard against snakes. The greater number are of the poisonous sorts—the cobra, whose sting will kill in twenty minutes; the garetta, Russel's viper and other species. In our own house and compound we have killed twelve, at least, of these deadly creatures. One rainy season there were four deaths from snake-bites inside of two weeks in our town. All through the country thousands of native people die from this cause, their bare feet and partly unclothed bodies giving many opportunities for the venomous sting to take effect.

Among the most annoying pests are the packs of jackals which howl around the house, if it is near the woods, and which even enter the limits of quite large towns. The howling of these beasts is simply hideous and keeps many people awake for hours. There is no danger unless one of the pack has hydrophobia, when its cowardice is gone and often a fine dog is bitten and must be shot.

Digitized by Google

Wolves often venture into towns and hyenas prowl around after dogs, cats or chickens, and sometimes the stillness of the night is broken by the far-away scream of the cheetah, or Indian leopard.

Tigers, of course, keep to the jungles. About eight miles from our place there is a good hunting ground for tigers. The officials go out with beaters—perhaps two hundred of them. These now surround a given tract, and then slowly advance toward a common center, beating pans and blowing horns to confuse the tiger. When it reaches the open space the hunters, concealed in trees, fire upon it. If only wounded it becomes dangerous, and many hunters are injured and some killed when they attempt to follow a wounded tiger.

Monkeys are a great annoyance and source of loss to the farmer and the gardener. They often descend upon our premises in numbers, sometimes a hundred at a time. They are driven away by noise, but manage to destroy a great deal in their flight through the trees. In driving into the country herds of deer are seen frequently, but these beautiful creatures do much damage to the crops. Game is plentiful everywhere.

During the rainy season, when trees and grass are green, the country is very beautiful. We make the most possible of this season and of the short and pleasant winter.

SOME TREES OF INDIA.

India's heritage of floral beauty lies in her trees. There are but few garden-flowers peculiar to India, but almost every tree is a bouquet of loveliness at some

Digitized by Google

time of the year, and the succession makes the highway a forest of bloom and turns the jungle into a wonderland park.

Every morning, as we drive to our work or go forth in search of one cool breeze to last during the parching heat of the day, our eyes are gladdened by the sylvan beauties about us, while we breathe the air filled with exquisite odors from millions of blossoms.

The *neem* comes first. There it stands, in its delicate green foliage, sprinkled over with tiny white blossoms like snowflakes. The odor is a fresh, sweet scent, just suited to the graceful appearance of the tree. This is one of the sacred trees. It was under the neem that *suttee,* the burning of child-widows, used to be celebrated. Beneath some of these trees stone altars are still to be seen, where fair young lives went out amid smoke and flame, while the hideous noise of the tom-tom drowned the cries of the victim, often a child in years.

The lordly banyan, covering an immense area, is celebrated all over the world. This tree is called by the natives the jungly *anjir,* or wild fig.

The tamarind has a small, insignificant bloom, but the tree is very lofty and its feathery green foliage makes it a prominent object of admiration. Its exceedingly tart fruit is much prized for curries.

The *jamon,* with its tassel-like blossom, stretches its long arms across the roadway and diffuses its perfume, like that of the azalea, far and wide. The light-yellow and green tassels make a great show.

Digitized by Google

The *peepul* has no visible bloom, but its white trunk and branches gleam through its glossy leaves, rivaling the birch in beauty. In size, the peepul far surpasses the birch. Under this tree we see many idols. Often the bark and wide-spreading roots are daubed with red, and many stop to worship the god of the tree.

The *kautchnor* has a large, white, lily-like bloom, one petal being of a pinkish purple. The flower comes before the leaves, and rows of these trees, interspersed with the fragile, pale-green *sesum,* hanging full of yellow-winged seed, make a pleasing vista of the highway.

A certain road near us is lined on either side for a distance of three miles with clumps of graceful bamboo, alternating with *sesum* and the black stemmed *babool.* The effect is lovely. Indeed, these yellows, blues, pinks and scarlets, with the setting of varied foliage, cannot be adequately described.

During the heat of April and May the *gold-mohur* blossoms. Its flat, spreading branches are covered with vivid red flowers. The common name is "forest-on-fire," and really it seems as though the blooms add to the heat of the sun. For truly oriental appearance, no tree can excel the gold-mohur.

Among the timber trees the babool and the teak stand preëminent. These woods seem almost indestructible by ordinary wear. In the oldest Buddhist temple in South India you can see some teakwood that has endured exposure for over twenty centuries. This temple is situated about forty miles from Poona and is known as Karli Cave, being a rock-hewn structure.

Digitized by Google

The date of the building is placed as early as 300 B. C., and by no authority later than the beginning of the Christian era. In the great arch overhead, cut in the rock, there are set wooden groins stretching from the pillars on either side. The wood is in a good state of preservation, and but few flaws can be seen from the rock floor.

The mango is one of the handsomest trees, comparing with the hardwood maple in shape and beauty. But the mango never drops its oblong leaves—and, whether standing only in its robe of green or when covered with countless yellowish flowers, or bending beneath the golden weight of the most delicious fruit in the world, it is always a joy to the sight.

Not only in trees notable for beauty or valuable for timber, but in fruit trees, also, is India rich. The mango comes first for excellence of fruit. Then there is the tree which bears the huge prickly jack fruit, weighing from sixteen to twenty pounds. This fruit does not rank next to the mango, but the tree is shapely and prominent, while the more excellent custard-apple grows on a small, scrubby tree.

The good fruit, with the exception of the mango, grows on the less pretentious trees. The orange, pomelo, fig, peach, mulberry and papita are all of small size. There are many other fruit trees. Some fruits, as the *bher* fruit, are very attractive to the black-faced monkeys.

In and out among these trees winds the thread of India's religion, tragedy and romance. Nearly every

Digitized by Google

tree or shrub enters in some way into the daily life of the people, down even to the adored *tulsi* plant, found in the smallest yard.

Some are prized for their medicinal properties, some revered for their connection with the history of the gods, and some for both reasons combined. This is especially true of the neem. Its bark and leaves are used for healing, and many religious rites are performed under its branches.

As among heathen nations of Bible times, you may find here "high places," or places of worship, under every green tree.

Under these bright skies, beneath the protecting shadows of the banyan and the velvety pink and green of the *chewulloo,* and amidst other beauties of river, hill and plain, flourish ignorance, superstition and heathen rites, proving that mountains, of themselves, do not give birth to nobility, nor do scenery and verdure alone create poesy. While these groves may perhaps produce a single poet, yet from them come thousands of loathsome, ash-covered fakirs and millions of superstitious people who revere these same fakirs as little less than God.

Amid these lovely scenes we long to see the men and women grow into stalwart forms akin to the physical strength of their loved peepul; to behold them putting on spiritual life, as the neem its sweetness and purity; and, to carry the simile further, bringing forth fruit unto life eternal, like the abundance of the rich mango of their groves and plains.

Digitized by Google

A WEEK ON THE NARBUDDA RIVER.

Camping on the banks of this river during the Burman Fair, or *Mela*, is full of interest to a foreigner.

As I sit writing in the tent, I wonder if more perfect weather could be found. There is a cool breeze blowing and the sky is bright and clear. Winter in India! The time when tourists come sightseeing, and then go back to tell of the luxuries that Europeans enjoy in this favored land; of fresh peas for Christmas dinner; oranges, pineapples and other fruits in abundance; a perfect climate, and so on. In fact, even residents forget the scarcity of good things in April and May; the hot blasts as from a furnace, which seem to dry up the very juices of the body, and all the other miseries of the hot season, including scorpions, centipedes and snakes.

It is in this favored cool season that the great Mela at Burman is held. Burman is a small collection of thatched huts of no consequence except for its numerous temples, its fine bathing ghat, and above all, its situation on the blue Narbudda, which in sanctity is considered second only to the mighty Ganges. Here thousands of pilgrims come every year to worship their favorite god or gods, out of the "gods many" which are here enshrined. Here also come other thousands to sell fruit, flowers, grain for temple-offerings, and all sorts of foodstuffs, brassware, cloth, jewelry and trinkets. Often the number reaches a lakh and a half, or one hundred and fifty thousand. This year, on ac-

Digitized by Google

MARBLE ROCKS ON NARBUDDA RIVER, NEAR JABALPUR.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

count of short crops, the number of people is smaller, probably about eighty thousand. The river bed at this place is very broad, and in the rainy season is often full. Now the river occupies the center of the bed, leaving a wide, sandy beach on one side several hundred yards back from the water. There the land rises in abrupt cliffs which are adorned by small white Hindu temples. Along the edge of this cliff, on the south of the river, are the tents of the English officials of the district, out on the Queen's business, and the more modest outfits of the missionaries, who are on the King's errand among this multitude. Scattered here and there among the trees are the improvised kitchens of the various camps, presided over by dusky-faced cooks, and presenting at night, with the curling smoke from the fires and the flitting dark figures, a fantastic picture. The Fair itself is on the sandy beach below, a small part straggling over the temporary bridge of bamboo to the other side of the river and extending along the north bank as far as the ghat.

This bamboo bridge is rebuilt every year, after the rains, and toll is collected during the eight or nine months to pay for the rebuilding of the bridge and to meet the government tax of twelve thousand rupees. The ox-carts, people and horses may cross the bridge, but the camels and elephants must wade the river a little below, where it is shallow.

From the cliff, where we are camped, the whole animated scene on the sands can be viewed. The beautiful Narbudda seems like two streams as it flows around a small island, green with trees and foliage and

Digitized by Google

crowned by a little minareted temple. The thousands of pilgrims on the sandy beach, clad in the varicolored garments of the Orient, red, yellow, purple, white and blue, gleaming in the bright Indian sun; the long rows of canvas-covered shops; the booths made of the branches of trees, calling to mind the old Jewish feast of tabernacles—all combine to form a picturesque and thoroughly Eastern scene.

Just where the stream unites below the island, on the north bank and almost facing our cliff, is the magnificent bathing ghat, built of dark stone and consisting of seventy-three steps, each one foot in height. This open-air stairway, over four hundred feet wide, beginning high up on the bank and descending beneath the water's edge, is an imposing sight. When covered from top to bottom with throngs of pilgrims, swaying to and fro, up and down, all intent on worship and praise and prayer, it is a touching sight as well.

Here and there on the stairs are wide platforms. On these small stone houses are built, partitioned off into cells and forming the rainy-weather refuge of the fakirs, or begging priests.

On one of the platforms, bowing before an image too loathsome to describe, is a group of noble-looking men. These are followed by a detachment of the commoner folk, forming the bulk of the throng. Near by is a group of women surrounding an image of the sacred bull; a little farther on a circle of dancing-girls, singing their weird songs, which sound like weeping, and the sadness of the strains seems to tell of centuries of oppression and darkness.

Digitized by Google

On either side of the river, scattered up and down the banks and on the little island, are the various temples dedicated to Vishnu, Siva, the indescribable Ling, and dozens of others. In and about these temples and on the platforms of the ghat, are idols of all sorts. Some are decidedly indecent and give the keynote to the degradation of the people. A constant stream of men and women is going up the paths to the temples, carrying their offerings of fruit, flowers, grain, sandal-wood, oil and butter; another stream of people, returning from their worship, is coming down.

Much that is meant for gaiety is going on, amusement as well as business being combined with religion in this yearly feast. Merry-go-rounds of primitive pattern; side-shows, where trained parrots and sparrows may be seen, and street-musicians with their long-drawn strains, enliven this bazaar.

One of the most noticeable features of the Mela is the swarm of fakirs. Many of them are dressed in flowing skirts and fancy head-gear, others are almost entirely naked, with their bodies smeared with the ashes from burnt cow manure, these ashes being considered especially sacred and purifying; some are attired in the holy saffron-hued garment, their faces tinted to match, and wearing long strings of prayer beads made from a rough brown nut; others are burdened with an enormous weight of chains, and all are considered holy in proportion to their condition of filthiness and general hideousness. These fakirs are, next to some of the idols, the most revolting sight to a stranger.

Digitized by Google

Business is brisk in the hundreds of little shops, many of which are no larger than large dry-goods boxes. The merchant stands outside and reaches in for what the purchaser wants. Others are more spacious, perhaps twelve by fifteen or twenty feet. It is easy to find what you wish, for at either end of every street is a sign-board saying, "Cloth line," "Candy line," "Jewelry row," "Fruit Street," and so forth. In these tiny jewlry shops may be found choice pieces of old coin which would delight collectors—the square Hyderabad silver rupee, the beautiful gold mohur that was once coined in India, and many others—which here are sold for ornaments.

At all times during the fair the bathers may be seen in the water, or descending and ascending the great ghat. But the special time appointed for bathing was on Sunday morning before sunrise. Wondering whether any were so devout as to plunge into the water at such a time, I threw on a woolen wrapper and, slipping out of the tent, stood on the cliff overlooking the dark stone ghat opposite. It was full of people, and hundreds were plunging into the stream, eager to wash away their sins in the sacred flood, knowing not of the "fountain opened for sin and uncleanliness in the house of David." The prudent ones waited until the sun had warmed the water before taking their bath. So the days went by, each full of new sights and experiences. There were water-sports on the river, the boys having swimming and diving matches, or climbing a greased pole leaning over the water, at the end of which dangled a little bag containing a rupee to reward

Digitized by Google

the one able to pull it off. Many tumbled into the water and swam to shore before the rupee was captured. Two nights there were fireworks on the river. Then we tried elephant riding, the whole party going in state on three, to attend the *durbar,* where the *malguzars* (property owners) and the petty rajahs of the district present their compliments to the deputy commissioner. These were all clad in their richest clothing. There were embroidered cashmere robes, pure goldwork in their pugris, and velvet, satin, silver and gold shimmering on every side. One pugri we noticed must have contained twenty or thirty yards of fine material woven at intervals with threads of pure gold, twisted into a rope and then twisted around the head in many folds and bands. But in almost every case the whole effect was spoiled by some incongruous article of attire—a soiled pugri with a velvet coat, or cheap cotton pantaloons with a satin robe worked in gold and silver thread. After the presentation of all these dignitaries by the tahsildar of the district to the deputy commissioner, the latter gave a speech in Hindustani, which met with a warm response, judging by the bows and salaams in the audience. Then he and all the rest of the Europeans were garlanded with flowers, marigolds and asters predominating, bouquets for all, followed by the inevitable *pansouparee,* which is betel leaves enclosing spice, lime and pounded betel nuts. On Monday night a brisk but happily brief shower of rain fell—a most unusual thing for this season, when you can plan a picnic weeks in advance, feeling sure of the weather. When the rain came down a cry of dis-

Digitized by Google

may went up from the fair and confusion reigned, as the shopkeepers endeavored to save their goods, and thousands who were utterly shelterless ran distractedly here and there. The next morning the roads were full of carts, people on foot, donkeys, long camel trains and elephants leaving the fair. Closely covered wagons conveyed away the few purdah women who had ventured to the Mela. Two days later the last tent on the cliff was folded and, like the Arabs, we "silently stole away."

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VIII.

BEHIND THE PURDAH.

Among the better classes in India women can only be reached by women. The male missionary can never, except by hearsay, gain any knowledge of the women kept in purdah, or, as they say in South India, the gosha women. Purdah means curtain, and the idea is that the women are restrained in concealment or secrecy. These women are never seen, for when they go out for a drive it is in carriages with Venetian blinds, or with "chicks" hanging at door or window; or, perhaps in a bullock-cart, over the frame of which a heavy blanket or quilt is thrown.

Let me introduce you to two or three of these houses, where dwell zenana, or purdah women. Zenana means simply the women's quarters. Some time ago I saw an article written by a missionary in which reference was made to zenana work. It was written as if the work were done in a country by that name, and he spoke of the people as "Zenanese." While appreciating the ridiculous mistake he made, yet I could but think that the women of the zenanas really constitute a distinct people—veiled and hidden.

But as I said, let us visit a few of these houses. Here is one occupied by a well-to-do pleader. It is a small, whitewashed house with a neat little veranda

Digitized by Google

in front. Here the men are sitting and much business is being transacted, besides plenty of visiting and gossiping. We pass through a side entrance, approached by a little alley, at the end of which hangs a coarse curtain. After giving warning of our approach, we enter the little courtyard. On three sides are the rooms of the house and on the other a high wall. This courtyard is paved and is very clean, in marked contrast to the courtyards of most of the houses we visit. The woman who lives here, although not able to come out or be baptized, is really an earnest Christian; so no idol or image or even a *tulsi* plant is seen in either her home or yard. She can read also and has her Bible and songbook in Bengali.

This is a bright spot—an oasis in the desert of heathenism in which we work. We have but one other like it. Very near this pleasant, though shut-in home, we enter a similar alley, raise another sack-cloth curtain and find ourselves in a very different little yard. This is a Mohammedan house. On two sides are narrow verandas; on the others, sheds for the cow, the calf, the buffalo, the goats and the chickens. As this enclosure is very small, not more than thirty feet across, we are practically in the stable, with all its odors. The yard is muddy, during the rainy season, and always full of litter. Over an old bedstead or *charpoy,* some home-made vermicelli is being strung out to dry. It is far from appetizing in appearance. Four women are present—the grandmother, mother and two daughters. The young women examine my dress and sun-hat; but the two older women leave

Digitized by Google

their curry-making to listen attentively to the lesson, only interrupting occasionally to say: *"Thik bat, Thik bat"* (Good words, Good words). Then we sing. Perhaps the chorus is swelled by the low of cattle or the bleating of the kid. On stifling mornings these surroundings are anything but agreeable; but the heavenly missionary, about whom we have come to speak, was born among such lowly scenes, so we should not disdain them. Just as we are leaving we notice one of the women giving opium to a child.

The next house we visit is also Mohammedan and more untidy even than the one we have just left. We sit inside the house, but, by keeping near the dingy curtain of the door, we get enough air to prevent asphyxiation, although it comes from the filthy courtyard. In spite of these untoward surroundings the mistress is the fine lady completely. She is dressed in loose Turkish trousers and quantities of jewelry, and would hold herself above work even if she had to climb over litter to reach her proper position. Oh! the idleness in these homes! Nothing to do and no one to teach! Feeling superior to menial work, while the house and courtyard reek with disease-germs and sickness is rampant all about! This lady is soon busy with the inevitable *pan* box. From the numerous little boxes in the lower part of the large one come forth the betel, cardamom, cocoanut, catechu and slacked lime, with which the delectable morsel called *pan* is made. The curious knives are held between the bare toes of the fair one as she chips up the ingredients. The lime and the catechu are smeared over the inside

Digitized by Google

of the betel leaf, bits of cocoanut, betel-nut, cardamom and sometimes other spices are put at the top, the leaf is folded together and pinned with a clove, and then passed around. The native women take the whole strong dose into their mouths at once and chew away until their lips, tongue and gums are a bright red. The juice, ejected now and then, is almost as disgusting as that from a tobacco chewer's mouth. We take a *pan* for politeness' sake, but keep it to give to a servant at home, and comply with the demands of custom by eating the seeds from a whole cardamom, which, being covered by nature, we know to be clean.

Now pass into this Brahmin's house. The wife comes into the courtyard hurriedly to say her husband is eating his food and, therefore, she cannot listen today. Just then we see this "lord of creation" sitting in a veranda eating with his fingers from a brass plate. He scarcely dares lift his eyes, he is so afraid we may do something to cause him to lose his meal. Should our shadow touch his dishes, or himself, the remainder of the food would be unclean and must be thrown away. We hurry away, but glance back in time to see the wife sit down at a respectful distance to watch him eat, waiting like a dog for the remains of the meal. This courtyard, to a superficial observer, might seem clean. The mud-floored house and veranda have been *leeped*—that is, smeared with cow-manure and water, which is the usual cleanser for the majority of houses here. There is very little litter about, but under the bench where the water jug stands it is green with

Digitized by Google

mould and the children are not cleanly in their habits. It is in no way a healthful place to live in, as we understand the term.

Many missionaries, in writing of India, speak of the people as cleanly in their ways. Our experience of ten years among all classes of people has convinced us that, in spite of numerous bathings among certain Hindu classes, which are chiefly ceremonial performances, the habits of the people of India as a whole are anything but cleanly, as we understand cleanliness. There are exceptions, and in some houses we can eat with as good an appetite as in our own; but in the great majority of dwellings the surroundings are disagreeable and the habits of the inmates far from neat or careful.

Besides these homes of upper-class Mohammedans, Hindus of various castes, of poor and rich, we have been in some of the finest houses in Calcutta, one of which was almost entirely built of marble; yet in all these the women live inferior, shut-in and, for the most part, idle lives. As their homes, so-called, are behind heavy curtains and high walls, so their thoughts are shrouded by the mists of ignorance and superstition, their hearts by unhappiness and loneliness and their soul denied the light and life of God.

A dark picture,—but no darker than the truth. I often think as I lift the purdah, which is so frequently made of sack-cloth, how fitting the material which shuts in the inmates of the zenana.

Many, perhaps most of these women, do not realize their own condition. Usage throughout long centuries

Digitized by Google

has paralyzed their feelings and sensibilities. The fish found in the underground river of the Mammoth Cave, in Kentucky, have ceased to develop eyes. But when the lords and masters of these women tell the Mem Sahib that these purdah women are just as happy as English women, they are telling what most of them know to be untrue. One Mohammedan gentleman of good education, said to me: "Why, so long have our women sat in the house that they canont walk any distance as you ladies can, even if they had the liberty to do so. It would be a hardship to them. They are happier as they are." Forsooth! Because a bird's pinions hang weak and powerless from disuse, therefore he is happier than the bright creatures caroling in yonder tree!

The rose-colored life of the harem and zenana, as pictured by travelers—always men, of course—who never *see* what they describe so poetically, has no reality in Eastern lands.

The wife of the man just referred to is a superior woman, considering her lack of opportunities. Could he have heard her pour out her heart to me one day, I wonder what he would have said. I did not dare tell him for fear he would forbid us the house.

This patient woman, trying to endure and smiling when her very soul revolted against her life, has often been a lesson to me. She seemed to long to see the beautiful world of which she could catch only tiny glimpses.

"Are not God's flowers and trees for us women also?" she asked. "I am so weary of this little backyard. Why did God make us to live so?"

Digitized by Google

"But," we said, "this is not God's doing, but man's. When Christ's message is accepted in this land every-one shall be free."

"How long will that be?" she asked, looking into our faces with appealing eyes.

"Perhaps in twenty-five years," we answered, scarcely knowing what to say.

'Twenty-five years! Then we shall be dead," was her despairing answer. "If I should die to-night," she continued, "I should be hurried away to the grave, and my own mother and sister could not see me, for they do not belong to this household. We are very strict Mohammedans here. Once, when two nephews came to visit us, they were sitting on the back veranda talking to my husband, so I made some nice *pan* and took it out to them. My husband told me afterwards that though they were relatives, I must never do such a thing again."

When this man gave us permission to visit his wife it was with the distinct understanding that we were not to teach the Bible. His wife wanted a sewing-machine and, if we would promise to teach her how to use it he would buy her one. We might sing our songs, but we must not read the Bible, he said, or pray in his house.

"Well, we can sing Bible and we can carry our Bibles along," I said, "so we'll go."

The machine was bought; and it was worth while going, merely to give the pleasure that the machine brought into that woman's life. But our mission did not end there. We sang Bible truths and finally, one

Digitized by Google

day, the woman asked us if our Bible told of the same things as our songs, and especially about the love of God. We told her it did and she asked us to read a verse. As her mother-in-law was present and offered no objection, we complied, and soon we were reading and praying with that family.

The husband is in government employ and, after we had been visiting in his house for about a year, he was tranferred to another station. In order to keep his wife in purdah on the journey, he chartered a car and had curtains put at all the windows. She looked forward with dread to her new home, for she said the house rented there was smaller than the one here, "and this one seems so small, when it is all one's world." This woman is in a prison as truly as if immured for some grave offense. Her one crime is in being a woman. For this, she may never wander among flowers, look up at stately trees, see the expanse of the azure sky or the clear moonlight falling upon the earth at night. She may not mingle even in companies of her own sex, except on the rarest occasions. When leaving here, she was invited to spend an afternoon at each of three Mohammedan houses. She asked her husband about going and he said: "You may have an afternoon for all three houses, and you are not to be out after six o'clock."

So, veiled from head to foot and seated in a bullock-cart whose bamboo top was covered with smothering blankets, this victim of Mohammed's inventions took a brief respite from her prison. The case of this Mussulmani is not an isolated one. Another woman here

Digitized by Google

came to a little brick-and-mud house as a bride of ten and never left it, even for a brief visit, until she became a grandmother. Fortunately for her the rains one summer beat it down so badly that her husband was obliged to secure another, in which she now lives. Probably she will never go out of it until carried to sleep in a still narrower one in the Mohammedan cemetery outside the city.

Hundreds and thousands of such cases, among both Hindus and Mohammedans, can be found in India. Life-sentences are common. Some women of the upper class live in oriental splendor and would resent the statement that they are unhappy. A few have fine furnishings and surroundings, rich clothes and quantities of costly jewelry. But these women spend their days in what would be to their Western sisters an elegant prison. Others, belonging to the classes who believe in reform, can go about a little; but they have no worthy interests, no taste for reading and live very selfish, empty lives. One woman we know bathes four or five times a day, anointing herself with almond paste and costly oils, using expensive soaps and perfumes, all to preserve her beauty, which she worships. Her powder-boxes are of silver, her eyebrow powder-boxes of pure gold, her toilet-tables covered with silver slabs and her couch draped in different-colored silks to suit the season. Her bath-room is lined with full-length mirrors and in her possession is every gem except the pearl of great price. She considers herself a very fortunate woman. It is in these exercises—in devising new ornaments for her

Digitized by Google

already overloaded silver jewel boxes and in rich eating—that she passes her days. There is no useful employment, no philanthropic schemes, no real home-making. Even the "eat, drink and be merry" life is carried out in its crudest and narrowest form. The possession of jewelry is one of the chief joys of these women. Even if in common mud-houses, without rugs, carpets, tables, pictures, chairs or any comforts, yet their jewel-boxes will be well furnished if there is any means to procure the gold, silver and precious stones.

The high-class women are guarded very carefully when they go to the Ganges or other sacred rivers to bathe. They go in purdah—that is, in shut-up *garis*, or carriages such as I have described, and usually very early in the morning, before the sun is up, to escape observation.

At some places—as for instance the sacred city of Pushkar, near Ajmere, beside the sacred lake—special zenana ghats have been built by rajahs for the women of their households. The rajahs of Bhurtpore, Odeypore, Jeypore and others have built such ghats there. Above is a court, open overhead, where the women are cutting their hair; or, in the case of widows, shaving their heads and being questioned, tutored and we might add *robbed* by those human leeches, Hindu priests. Then you descend, over steep, slippery steps, down, down, until you reach a room where the sun never penetrates, and so low that you cannot stand upright in it. Here water is admitted for the women's bath. A dark and

Digitized by Google

dismal arrangement; but, if it is *secret,* it satisfies all demands for the Hindu woman.

One of the underlying reasons for this seclusion is the idea that women are not to be trusted. It is only necessary to read a few of Manu's laws regarding women and some catechisms referring to woman's position to realize what is the real condition of India's one hundred million women, of whom ninety-nine million can neither read nor write. One catechism runs thus:

"Question—What is the gate to hell? Answer—A woman. Q.—What bewitches like wine? A.—A woman. Q.—Who is the wisest of the wise? A.—He who has not been deceived by woman, who may be compared to malignant fiends. Q.—What are fetters to men? A.—Women. Q.—What is that which cannot be trusted? A.—A woman."

Then Manu says: "Hear, now, the duties of woman. By a girl, by a young woman, or even by an aged one, nothing must be done independently, even in her own house." Again he says: "Though destitute of virtue, or seeking pleasure elsewhere, or devoid of good qualities, yet a husband must be constantly worshiped by his wife."

This is, indeed, her religion—to look upon her husband as a god and to hope for salvation only through him. So inbred is this idea of subjection and seclusion that many think, as one woman said in all sincerity to Miss Stephens, in Madras: "I am not a sinner, for I never even look outside of my house." In spite of this degraded position the women of India

Digitized by Google

have a great influence over their children and, in religious matters, even over their husbands. It is they who see to the maintenance of the worship of the household gods; they who make the special sweetmeats for *dawali* holidays and who kindle the little lights to keep off the evil spirits; they who instruct the little ones in superstitions which remain with them all their lives. In the case of apostasizing Christians it is usually the women, being less well taught than the men, who soonest go back to heathenism. In a case we knew, a child fell sick. The mother wanted something more to be done and, at her instigation, a fowl was sacrificed to the old Hindu god they had left. In other cases women have been known to hide idols, thinking they may be wanted some time, should the new religion fail.

We see, then, how all-important it is to reach the women; and the zenana work, expensive as it undoubtedly is, and requiring so many workers, is yet the only way to reach millions and millions of women—especially those of the upper classes. We are often told that people in America and England think comparatively little of this work, since its results seem so small, and this feeling is exhibited to some extent by certain missionaries, who have been in other work all their lives and have given very little thought to this. If by result is meant the number of baptisms, then we must certainly concede that there is very little use in zenana work. But as we do not believe that salvation is obtained in the rite of baptism; we cannot estimate the number saved by the baptisms received. We

Digitized by Google

all know well that hundreds who have accepted baptism in Christian lands, as well as in India, have appropriated almost nothing else of the religion of Christ. Many can truly say with some of the early converts in Paul's day: "We have not so much as heard that there is a Holy Ghost."

Hundreds of zenana women have escaped entirely from the thraldom of idolatry through the teaching of Christ's life and example; yet we know that among some baptized, nominal Christians idol worship is often persisted in for years as it was in the early days in Britain among the converted Druids, and as in Paul's time.

All these things are not to be wondered at when founding the Christian church where heathenism, with all its practices, prevails; but it is certain that, in looking for results, we must seek other manifestations besides baptisms and membership in the church.

It is said, however, that in Lucknow there was no perceptible increase in the Christian community until after the zenana work was opened and carried on for some time. The mothers were taught, the children influenced and many are now Christian students in Christian colleges and members of churches. This zenana work was not even begun until 1855, and not one in a hundred homes is yet reached. We do not know the value that God puts upon the various souls in this complex and confusing world panorama; yet how we are stirred and thrilled when a Pundita Ramabai, a Soonderbai Powar or a Sooboo Nagam lay their rich treasures of intellect and heart at the feet of our Lord.

Digitized by Google

Such are naturally as richly endowed as their husbands, fathers and brothers, and only need opportunity to develop into cultured, noble women.

As we spend money and time in the effort to reach the intelligent classes of *men* in India, let us be equally lavish in trying to reach their wives and sisters. Teach these women until they will urge the sons to espouse the cause of reform and receive and defend the pure religion of Christ. One mother among my zenana women did that very thing. Doubtless there are more like her. The real results to be sought are seen in the lives of the women, their influence over their children, and, in some cases, upon their husbands. A friend, in writing from America, expressed her surprise that we could enter the zenanas at all. "When I read of such persecutions as met Sooboo Nagam Ammal in Madras when she wished to become a Christian, and which followed after her public confession of the faith, I cannot understand why the men allow you to enter the houses at all." Humanly speaking, there is no adequate explanation of this toleration; yet a partial reason may be found in the fact that the men notice a difference in their homes when the women are taught by the missionaries and Bible-women. One man said to us: "You are very welcome to my house. Since you have been teaching my women there is scarcely any quarreling in this house." Such news spreads and, in the interest of peace, industry and cleanliness, we are welcomed. Many of these men desire their women to learn to be wiser and better and sweeter-tempered, but do not wish them to become baptized

Digitized by Google

and recognized Christians. This latter would break their caste and all the consequences of boycotting and ostracism would follow.

There are many women in the purdah homes who are living beautiful lives; many who never bow to idols and have none about the premises. Some outwardly do homage to idols, when others do, in order to avoid family strife, but their hearts are not in the ceremony. They tell us that they quietly say their prayers to the true God and, like Naaman, the Syrian, pray to be forgiven as they bow before Ganesh and other false gods, unwilling worshipers, as was Naaman in the house of Rimmon—secret disciples, it is true, but in times of persecution there are always secret disciples. There were such in the olden days in Rome. Even a Nicodemus came by night into the presence of Jesus.

Many of these women would find very little difficulty in obtaining the consent of their husbands to their receiving baptism if it could be administered in the home by women-missionaries. In some missionary circles in America and Scotland the plea has been made for the full ordination of some consecrated women to the ministry in order that this need in the zenanas might be met. Chundra Leela, the devoted Bengali woman preacher and teacher, on finding herself alone with a dying convert who pleaded for baptism, waited for no authority from man, but simply and reverently administered the rite—and who shall say it was not blessed of God?

What effect will all this teaching of the women have upon the establishing of the Christian church in India?

Digitized by Google

These women are being educated and confirmed in the virtues which will hold them steady when the artificial props of purity are withdrawn; and, when the men of the higher castes come in large numbers, as those of the lower classes are already coming, these women will be ready to take their places beside their husbands and brothers in the church.

Some of the ideas of seclusion will take long to die. It is possible that at first it may be expedient to build our churches with a partition down the center, as some Christian churches are constructed in China and as one is already built here in India, at Peshawur. Or in the middle we may hang up a real purdah, until the spiritual purdah grows strong. The individual cup at communion may be necessary before many of the delicately reared could be physically able to partake of this Christian sacrament. But all these things are but minutiæ in the work, which is to bring high and low to the feet of our common Lord.

I love the "zenanese." No class needs the gospel more and perhaps none receives it more gladly.

The walls of adamantine prejudice and caste will fall some day, and meantime we are marching around this Jericho, knowing well that the seventh day will dawn.

In the grand total of work in India which unseen hands are computing, we shall find that the days of effort spent in luxurious homes or in mud-floored huts, behind silken or sack-cloth purdahs, working among the shut-in women of the upper classes, have borne rich fruit.

Digitized by Google

Just now the mighty cataract of Niagara is thundering in our ears as the thousands of low-caste flock into the Kingdom. Everyone sees and hears and applauds with joy. But the mighty Colorado is also busy at work cutting the great canyon through ignorance, superstition and fear—a glorious channel for the flowing of the River of the Water of Life!

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IX.

THE IRON BRACELET.

In this land caste dominates everything from birth, marriage, death and religion down to the daily meal and even the direction in which a man's shadow may fall. Yet, with all its minuteness, its requirements are so constantly incoherent and illogical that it is very difficult to recount certain customs and ideas without fear of contradiction from someone who has lived in another part of India and known different peoples and usages. The practice of wearing iron bracelets belongs to some Brahmins and Kyasts of Bengal, and may obtain among other castes elsewhere. In some parts of Southern India a wedding-necklet is worn in place of the iron bracelet, and it may also be of different materials.

In visiting a Bengali lady I noticed some very dainty and beautiful gold circlets on her wrists and took her hand in order to look at them more carefully, when a dull old iron bracelet came into view. I expressed my surprise that such an ugly band should find its place among such beauties, when the owner explained its presence as follows: "It is," she said, "the sign of our marriage and is put on by the mother-in-law, and must never be put off even in death." Many women, ashamed of the disfiguring manacle, have it covered with solid gold, this woman told me, but the

Digitized by Google

iron is always there. How typical is the iron fetter of marriage and, in fact, of the whole condition of woman in Eastern lands!

An American, lecturing on Turkey, seemed to see only the golden exterior of life in the wealthy harem, and painted the lot of its women in glowing colors; but could he have listened, as no man is ever permitted to do, to the sorrowful story, seldom divulged to a foreigner, even though a woman, he would have recognized the iron fetter underneath the gold.

A beautiful English girl whom I met married a Hindu, while he was in college in England. She says that she and her people must have been lunatics when they agreed to such a marriage. The man is kind in his way, but they can never have a *home*. Equality of the sexes is a thing undreamed of by an Oriental, unless he is enlightened by the religion of Christ. Even then, as a rule, he discerns but feebly that woman is anything better than a slave or, at most, a toy. As women rise to their true sphere through education and reform, these ideas will disappear; but the process cannot be rapid.

Another instance is that of a handsome young Mohammedan student in England, who married a lovely but foolish girl. On the voyage out he produced the iron manacle, telling her that it was time for her to know that he had three other wives in India, with whom she must share his wealth, his *house* (not home) and his name. A lady on board the same ship saw the poor, deluded young bride, weeping herself ill

Digitized by Google

over the railings of the deck; tempted every day to fling herself into the waves and end her misery.

All over India unwilling, purchased and unknowing brides are having the iron fetter riveted on arms, hearts and lives!

A native lady once said to me: "If you English and American ladies accomplish nothing else in India, be sure and do all you can to break up the custom of early marriage. We must look to you. The Englishmen will make laws when the English women demand them for their suffering sisters."

In this same lady's house I saw a bride of eleven years, decked in silks and jewels and smiling in childish satisfaction over her ornaments. Poor, innocent little thing! In a few months the iron fetter will be riveted and, in the dull drudgery of the mother-in-law's home, the smiles will vanish, and, unless here is one of the extremely rare exceptions, her life will be shrouded in gloom.

Soonderbai Powar, an educated Christian native lady, told me of a great-great-grandmother aged forty-eight. She was a mother at twelve years of age—so was her daughter, her grand-daughter and her great-granddaughter. A cousin of this lady was also a mother at twelve. When called in from play to nurse the child, she would pinch it to make it cry so loud that an older relative would take it from her and the child-mother be allowed to return to her sports.

Often a child of ten is not only married ceremonially, but given to the husband as his actual wife at once. Among Brahmins, girls are usually married be-

Digitized by Google

tween the ages of three and twelve. Not to be married before they reach the age of puberty means excommunication of themselves and their parents. Many girls are given to men fifty, sixty or even seventy years of age. Therefore, thousands are left widows while still children. Nothing can break the marriage bond so far as the woman is concerned. She can never remarry. The husband can, however, set his wife aside if she is childless, and for various other reasons.

When infant marriages are the rule, not only among Brahmins, but among most so-called twice-born castes, and even imitated lower in the scale, no wonder the fetter must be one of iron to make it binding, and the widow's fate rendered sufficiently terrible to prevent wretched women from attempting self-made widowhood.

Very little has been done by government since 1891, when the age of consent was raised to twelve years. But in thousands of cases this regulation is not observed, and, since the home of the child-bride is in her husband's family, it will be seen how difficult any prosecution would be. A wife must live with her husband, however cruel or unnatural he may prove. It is left to the discretion of a judge whether, on refusal to go back to him, she may be sent to prison. In Mysore, a native state, an act was passed in 1894 prohibiting marriages of girls under eight years of age and of men over fifty to girls under fourteen.

When the act proposing to raise the age of consent from ten to twelve years was being considered, in 1891, there were large gatherings of native gentlemen

Digitized by Google

to protest against any reform of Hindu marriage customs. The pundits of Poona waited on Lord Reay to remonstrate with him against the proposal. We were living in Poona at the time, and many and bitter were the denunciations of the bill when it finally passed. The Social Congress met in Bombay in 1889 and petitioned government to protect girls, married as well as unmarried, at least up to the age of twelve. Then, in 1890, occurred the horrible death of Phulmani Dasi, a little girl under twelve years of age. Her husband was sentenced to one year's imprisonment. The agitation caused by this case was very great, and, to prove it was simply one among hundreds similar, a memorial was prepared by Mrs. Monelle Mansell, an American lady-physician, which she had signed by fifty-five other lady-physicians. In this memorial thirteen cases, too awful to be given here, were cited, proving beyond question the charges brought against child-marriage on the ground of suffering inflicted. This memorial showed that "death, crippling for life, torture that would put a fiend to shame," all were the result of this dreadful custom.

Another memorial was sent by eighteen hundred native ladies from all parts of India, addressed to the Queen Empress, asking her to prevent a cruel wrong to which the womanhood of India is now subject. This memorial, like that of the lady-physicians, asked for protection for girls under fourteen. The opposition, strong as it was in Poona, was not so great or so violent as in Bengal.

Digitized by Google

The fear on the part of the government was that the passage of the act would be considered an interference with the religious customs of the people and therefore lead to riot. The bill finally passed, fixing the age of consent at twelve.

The Countess of Dufferin's scheme of a national association for supplying medical aid to women had a very significant origin, showing that in spite of the degraded position given to woman in this land, there are fair and noble examples of enlightened thought among them.

The Government Medical Department is well equipped and you will find hospitals and dispensaries in almost every town of any considerable size. But as nearly five million women live behind the purdah, and fully as many more share the same ideas as their purdah or gosha sisters, they in consequence suffer greatly from malpractice of ignorant native nurses, doctors so-called, and midwives. They would on no account see a male practitioner and so must suffer in silence.

In 1869 the first woman-physician with a diploma who ever set foot in Asia, Miss Clara Swain, was sent out by the American Methodist Foreign Missionary Society. Later Miss Bielby was sent by the Indian Female Normal School to Lucknow. Miss Bielby was called to Punna to attend the Mähäräjäh's wife. When the Rani grew better and learned that Miss Bielby was about to return to England, she sent all her attendants from the room and said:

"You are going to England and I want you to tell the Queen and the Prince and Princess of Wales and

Digitized by Google

the men and women in England that the women in India suffer when they are sick."

She meant doubtless that they suffer without remedy. Then she went on to say that she asked for no change in their social condition, but only relief from cruel suffering. * Miss Bielby explained the difficulty of approaching the Queen, but believing Her Majesty was good and gracious, the Rani insisted on dictating a message, telling Miss Bielby to write it small, so she could carry it in a locket and give it herself to the Queen. Finally, through some court ladies, the Queen heard of this and sent for Miss Bielby, listened to the message and accepted the locket. She sent the following reply:

"We should wish it generally known that we sympathize with every effort made to relieve the suffering of the women in India."

The subject attracted great attention in England and, as Lord Dufferin was about to sail for India as Viceroy, the Queen requested Lady Dufferin to do all in her power in this direction. This is the touching story of the origin of the National Association, which was organized in 1885. This movement for reform was hailed by both Hindus and Mohammedans and received support both in sympathy and money.

This has alleviated the misery of thousands of cases. It would seem tenfold wiser to relieve much of the suffering of mere children, by still further raising the age of consent, so as to do away with child-mar-

*From Mrs. Fuller's book, "Wrongs of Indian Womanhood."

Digitized by Google

riage altogether. Meantime, while this cannot be done, we hail with joy these hospitals and lady-practitioners for women.

Not only Hindu, but Mohammedan women may well wear the iron emblem of their married and social condition. The Koran does not forbid women being taught religion, and there is nothing in the Vedas or Shastras commanding the keeping of purdah. Polygamy receives far greater countenance in Mohammedanism, and this of itself is sufficient to degrade their women. Added to this the Mohammedans have imbibed many of the Hindu ideas of female untrustworthiness and ignorance, making the woman's lot harder than polygamy alone would render it. On the other hand the Hindus—in addition to the hard precepts of Manu, assigning to women approximately the place of animals—adopted from their Mohammedan conquerors the slavish custom of purdah, so that, by the association of the two races, the sadness of the condition of women in each is doubled.

A case in Bombay which came to the knowledge of an American lady-doctor, and which she told me, shows the estimate put upon women by thousands upon thousands of men in India. This is the story of the native man told in broken English:

"I get disease," he said. It take many rupees to cure me. Now wife get same ailment. For what you cure her? She is good wife, sixteen years old, she cook for me and my three brothers. Not want new *sari* every year. She go up and down stairs all day, carry water jugs up, never complains. If you cure

Digitized by Google

for few rupees she can live. If you want many rupees she must die and I get new wife. Maybe not get such a good wife." Comment is unnecessary.

How often, when I have gone into Mohammedan houses (I never say home when I can avoid it, for there is no such hallowed place in India outside of Christ's gospel), I have found the wife in bitter tears. A new wife has been brought home and, in spite of all Mohammedans and Mormons may say, the God-given instinct of the true wife cries out against this insult to her womanhood. Often, when there are grown-up married daughters in Mohammedan houses, the father will bring home another wife younger than the daughters. Two or more wives in a home create untold misery by quarreling and jealousy. It is a struggle to prove which shall be mistress of the house or the hut. In one home I visit, the new wife—a perfect beauty by the way—sits in the sun, eating sweets and pan, or in the shade, if it be hot weather, while the first wife and the mother of the husband spin from early morn till dark to earn sufficient to support the additional member of the family. In another family it was the story of "Sarah and Hagar" repeated, for the queenly first wife managed to make a slave of the second, never allowing her to enter her apartment and giving her only calico, brass and glass to wear, while she, the rightful mistress, was attired in silks and gold and jewels.

How these men manage to find their wives in spite of the incomprehensible purdah system I do not know exactly, but probably by negotiating with poor men

Digitized by Google

who could not afford the expense attendant on giving their daughters as first wives. Often, however, they are taken from other and lower castes and even then the second one frequently manages to be first in position. Monier Williams says, in his book on "Brahminism and Hinduism", that the women are not unhappy in India; moreover, that they are loved. He also declares that cruel treatment by brutal husbands is unknown. In view of the statements made by the doctors in the memorial referred to, this is an unsubstantiated assertion. An old lady in Poona saw a woman, years ago, whose eyes had just been put out by her husband, a goldsmith, because she had spoken to a man when her mother-in-law was absent from the shop. Dr. Stephens, an American lady-doctor, has told me some awful tales of cruel beatings and brandings that came under her knowledge as superintendent of the government dispensary in Poona. I, myself, have seen poor, noseless creatures run screaming to the *katcheri* (court house) with bleeding faces to try and get redress for the shameful wrong done them. This cutting off the nose of the wife, if the husband believes her unfaithful, is no uncommon occurrence, even if the man himself is notoriously inconstant. We see many such disfigured faces and no doubt some are the result merely of suspicion and jealousy. Wife-beating is most common here, and the wife has no redress. After the remarkable statement by so eminent a scholar as Monier Williams, he goes on to say (I quote exactly from pages 387 and 388):

> In regard to women, the general feeling is that they are the necessary machines for producing children

Digitized by Google

> (Manu lx:96), and, without children, there could be no due performance of the funeral rites, essential to the peace of a man's soul after death. This is secured by early marriage. If the law required the consent of boys and girls before the marriage ceremony they might decline to give it. Hence girls are betrothed at three or four years of age, and go through the marriage ceremony at seven to boys of whom they know nothing; and if these boy husbands die the girls remain virgin widows all their lives. They may be taken to their boy husbands' homes at the age of ten and may even become mothers before eleven.

Sir Monier Williams then refers to a law, passed Mar. 19, 1891, making it illegal for girls to become real wives before the age of twelve, and he concludes in the well-deserved sarcasm: "It now remains to be seen whether this law will become almost a dead-letter, like the act of 1856 for legalizing the marriage of widows."

We, ourselves, know of cases where brides of ten are taken to their husband's homes, but if there is any report given to the authorities, the question is asked: "How can you prove she is his real wife?"

Then Sir Monier Williams goes on to give further items regarding woman's status in Indian law, religion and society. After saying that they are not unhappy, he admits all the following:

> It is true that, theoretically, they are ignored as separate units of society. It is true that they abstain from pronouncing their husband's name, calling him simply "lord," or "the master," or "the chosen" *(vera)*, and they themselves are never directly alluded to by their husbands in conversation. It is true that for a male friend to mention their names or even inquire after their health would be a breach of etiquette. It is true, too, that their life is spent

Digitized by Google

> in petty household duties, in superintending the family *cuisine*, in a wearisome round of trivial acts. It is even true that in religion they are theoretically placed on the same level as Sudras. They are allowed no formal introduction into the Hindu faith, no investiture with the sacred thread, no spiritual second birth. Marriage is to them the end and aim of life, and the only medium of regeneration. No other purifactory rite is permitted to them. They never read, repeat or listen to the Veda. Yet, for all that, the women of India are the mainstay of Hinduism.

Again (page 388):

> Of course, those women of the upper classes who are cooped up behind purdahs, in secluded apartments, vegetate in profound ignorance of the world around them, while the duty of training and forming the character of their children is, I fear, neglected by all. Still, the women of India are generally satisfied with their position and desire no change.

Is there any foothold for happiness in such a life? Neglect the duty of training their children! What would be expected of a mother in Western lands, to whom all the fountains of knowledge, respect and even religion were closed, in regard to training her children? You cannot teach Euclid before you learn addition.

As viewed by a woman's eyes, in rich and poor homes, among high and low, a woman's life in India seems a most piteous thing—a wrong crying out to God and humanity for redress! In the narrow and dingy houses, without music, pictures or books—except in the few houses where reforms are dawning—without social privileges, with no companionship from husband or sons, who despise her enforced ignorance, deprived of her daughters while they are yet little children, eating the leavings of the two daily meals, flying

Digitized by Google

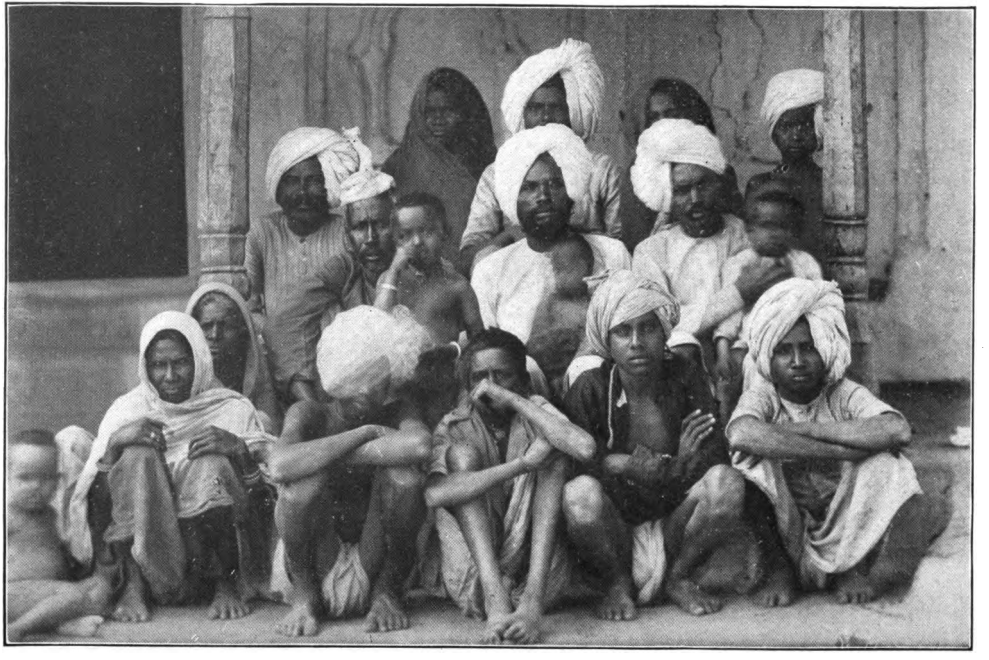
from the presence of the lord and master—always under the ban of restraint and silence—verily the iron bands on the arms of the Kyast Bengali women are typical of the bands on all their sisters in India!

Prisoners of custom and superstition, they look with suspicion as well as with envy on their happy sisters from the West, and wonder how they can be good and free at the same time. Sitting idle, yet weary—some few in gilded cages, but with the iron hidden under gold, and all crushed by the Hindu and the Mohammedan opinions and rules regarding their sex—with sad, appealing eyes they look to us for light.

Oh! queens of cottages or mansions in the Western lands, honored by your husbands, reverenced by your sons, with fair daughters growing up into noble womanhood about you, turn your hearts, your thoughts and your efforts to your sisters of the Orient. Can you not, like the little Rani of Punna, send a message in a golden locket of love that will open some door, rend some purdah, or let in one ray of light on your sister with the iron bracelet?

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



A GROUP OF COMMON PEOPLE.
Chapter X.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER X.

LOWER CASTE WOMEN.

The question was asked at a large assembly of missionaries in America: "To what extent do male missionaries and native preachers secure the conversion of native women? And what have they to do in training native Christian women in Christian doctrine and life?"

It is easier to answer the second part of the question first. In so far as the native Christian women attend the preaching and praying services, they have the same opportunity of being taught as women in other lands, but herein lies the difficulty. Very few will go to the public service willingly unless they have been pupils in the mission schools, or are wives of workers in the mission. Among village Christians it is well known that the women are behind the men in knowledge of Christian doctrine and life. This is very easily understood and explained. The missionary, or native preacher, can secure but few women hearers as he goes about proclaiming the gospel message. In many villages the women are afraid of a European and will flee from one. A white-face terrifies village children who have never seen such pale features before; and, in a measure, this fear is shared by the women.

The seclusion in which by far the greater part of the upper and middle class women are kept has a reflex ac-

Digitized by Google

tion on the women of the lower castes. The low-caste woman, as well as her high-born sister, often refuses to utter her husband's name. When Lodhi, Marwarri and other intermediate caste-women meet men on the road, they will hastily draw their saris over their faces. This is, in a small way, maintaining the high-toned fashion of purdah. So, the gentle timidity of the Brahmin, or Kyast women, percolates down through the interlapping and confusing strata of caste until it assumes a foolish shame-facedness in the low-caste women when addressed by men. Very few women consider it exactly respectable to stand or sit in a congregation of men; so that, in town or village, the only effectual way of reaching them is by sending the wives of missionaries, or perhaps, best of all, the woman medical missionary, into their midst.

When a low-caste man decides to become a Christian his wife usually follows obediently, although untaught and unconvinced of the truth of the new religion. Accustomed to look upon their wives as slightly better than chattels, the men do very little or nothing in the way of instructing them. It is small wonder, then, that the women sometimes return to idolatry, the religion taught them by their mothers. There is perhaps no greater need in India than of women evangelists, like the beloved and translated Phoebe Rowe, who will go about among the ignorant female converts, teaching these babes in Christ how to keep themselves from idols. Zenana work was first begun by the wives of missionaries and it is only they and their unmarried sisters from Europe and America

Digitized by Google

who can carry it on. Similarly only women can reach the lower-caste women. According to Rev. Mr. Storrow, in the *Missionary Review* for April, 1900, not one-fourth of the 715,000 villages of the empire have ever known the presence of a Christian lady.

If you will come with me into some of these homes you will get a much better idea of how these women live and how work is carried on among them. I think, too, you will see their needs more plainly, pity them more deeply, and, better still, help them more intelligently.

The morning is a lovely one in the rainy season, with air clear as crystal after the heavy shower of the previous night. A lovely morning, if one keeps to lovely places, but we know well what awaits us in the narrow, dirty, maladorous lanes of the town! We stop the ox-cart, or *tonga*, in the main street or bazaar and go on foot down a little alley. My umbrella touches the walls on either side. As we approach the house we are to visit on this day of the week we are informed that there is small-pox within. We return and enter the veranda of a small house, the front of which is devoted to a small shop. Baskets of half-spoiled mangoes, a few fresh *corunders* (a small berry resembling a gooseberry), and various grains and seeds are here exposed for sale. The flies fairly swarm. A little baby, in a swing made of rope and sacking, is almost covered with them. "How the flies are biting that child!" I say in Hindustani. A woman throws a large soiled cloth over the naked little one, face and all, saying: "Yes, the flies come so thickly because

Digitized by Google

he's got the small-pox." We hurriedly take leave, for the sake of the white babies at home, who are already having a sufficiently severe struggle with climate.

We enter a small side street where two women, living in adjoining houses, have expressed a desire to learn to read and to hear the Bible lessons. We sit down on a *charpoy,* or corded cot, carried out for our accommodation. The women sit on the damp ground in front of us. At the back of us is a low mud wall, on which, perched like crows, a line of men and boys have collected to listen. One man eyes us very sharply, but we pay no attention. As the lesson on the Hindi alphabet proceeds, the Bible-woman suggests the desirability of slates. Several native boys run into different mud huts and reappear with slates and bits of pencil. Both women begin to write the characters, seeming greatly pleased at the prospect of learning something. One woman says that she has always wanted to learn. The other explains that she wishes to learn to write so that she can send a letter of her own to her mother. As the second woman speaks, the sharp-eyed man roars out:

"Put that book down, and that slate, too! This is enough of this nonsense. You are a household woman. Attend to your house! I'll kick you out of the house if you come around here with your learning. Do you think you will become like a man?"

The woman held fast to her book and slate until we persuaded her to give them up, lest they should become the occasion of strife. Before we left, however, I tried to impress upon that very unlordly mascu-

Digitized by Google

line that the best housekeepers are the women who can read and learn. I am afraid the seed has fallen upon stony ground, although he, as well as the members of the line on the wall, understand all I say, for I speak very fair Hindustani when I am indignant.

Poor woman! How disappointed and chagrined she looked! The glimpse into the world of lettters is over; the door of knowledge is slammed in her face. Instead of the smile and chuckle of satisfaction over each laboriously formed letter, returns the dull, habitual expression of the slave. The woman's soul has been thrust back into the silence of ignorance, which in oriental opinion is its proper abode.

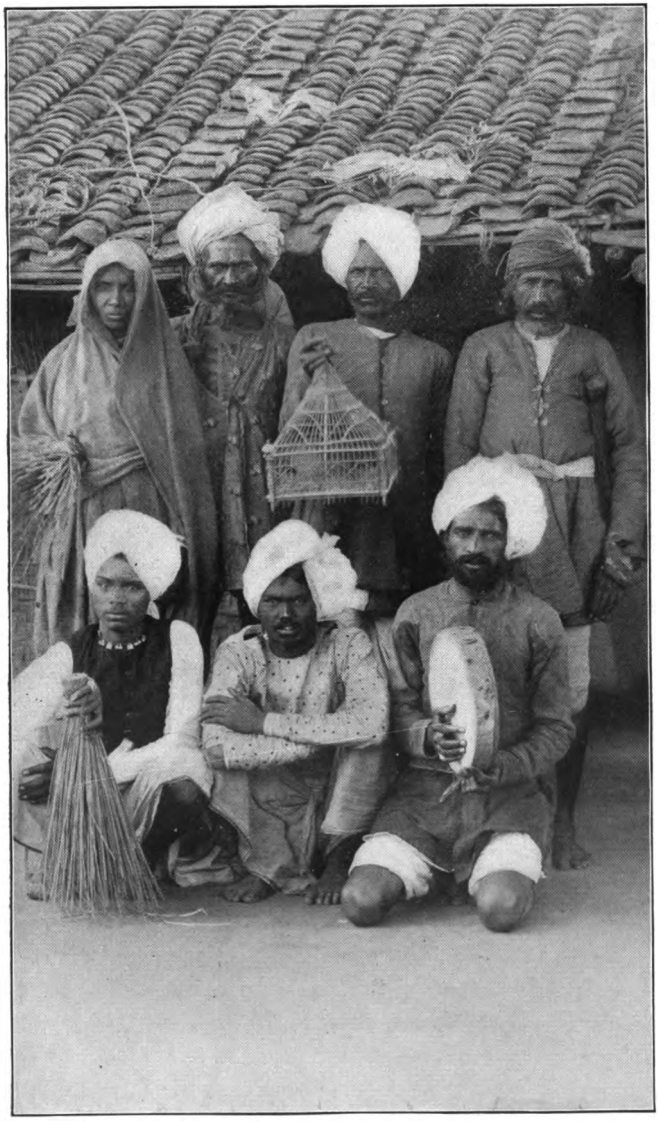
Returning to the tonga we drive some distance to a group of houses occupied by farm laborers. Here we find some interesting women. The house, in the veranda of which we sit, contains four generations—the great-grandmother, grandmother, two young mothers and three children. One of these young women seems very anxious to learn. She is young and pretty and she says she wants to be more like her husband. He has just received a scholarship in the Patna Medical College. While he was studying here in the government school his wife became so anxious to learn something, too, that she managed to take lessons for a time, at very low fees, from a Brahmin pundit. After a time he said she needed a new book, paper and pencils and, if she would give him a rupee, he would get them. She could not persuade the family to give her the rupee. The pundit threatened to stop the lessons, so in her desperation she stole the rupee from the house and

Digitized by Google

then was only rewarded by the pundit's absconding without giving her a book or another lesson. The family were vexed about the rupee and stopped her lessons for a year. Some of this family were assisted with work during the famine of 1897 and that gave them some confidence in the Christians; so we have permission to teach this woman and three of her neighbors, who have become ambitious through her example.

Another morning go with me and my helpers to visit some sweeper and Basor families. We set a special day aside for visiting these people, as we may not go from the out caste houses into any Hindu or Mohammedan dwellings, unless we have previously gone home and bathed and changed our clothing. These people seem indeed out-castes and forlorn. The sweepers are the scavengers and clean away all sorts of refuse and filth. Most of them have a disagreeable odor about them, and usually live in the most disagreeable and unwholesome parts of the town and villages or, very often, outside of the town limits altogether. The Basors, at least in this part of India, seem a more degraded people than the sweepers, and live more filthily. The houses are mud or grass huts. We crawl under a sort of veranda, not four feet high, and take our seats on the mud floor. Near our feet two or three frightful black Indian hogs are wallowing. One of the women is cleaning wheat and two others are grinding at the mill. A few from neighboring huts come up as we sing. As we read and explain, the women often interrupt by quarreling with one another

Digitized by Google



A GROUP OF SWEEPERS.

Tenth Chapter.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

or throwing stones at pigs and goats. We wonder, as we close the book, if we have not in a double sense been casting our pearls before swine.

But a leper woman, standing as near as she dared, has heard of the healing of the "ten." Another woman says that this visit is her one joy, and she repeats over and over in Hindi the sweet words of John 3:16, so as to be able to say them by herself. She can only repeat, without prompting, "For God so loved." As we think of this ignorant seeker and the poor leper we try to forget the swarms of flies, the heat and the sickening sights that we cannot even write about, and return to the mission-house, unable to eat the late breakfast after the experience of the morning, and thinking sadly of the needs of the poor and ignorant about us. Many writers concerning India note the erect carriage and fine appearance of the coolie women. It is true that the custom of carrying head loads conduces to an erect bearing, but there is very little beauty to be observed among the lower classes. Some of the children are naturally pretty, but most so neglected that they have no chance to be attractive. In the mission-schools you will see many interesting and some even beautiful faces belonging to the lower castes, but here there is care, proper food, instruction and love. The only conspicuous beauty I have seen in India is among the higher classes. Here, again, many otherwise pretty faces, as regards form and color, are spoiled by the dull expression of ignorance or of those imprisoned. The most beautiful woman that I have ever seen, however, is in India. She is a fair Bengali and has been quite well

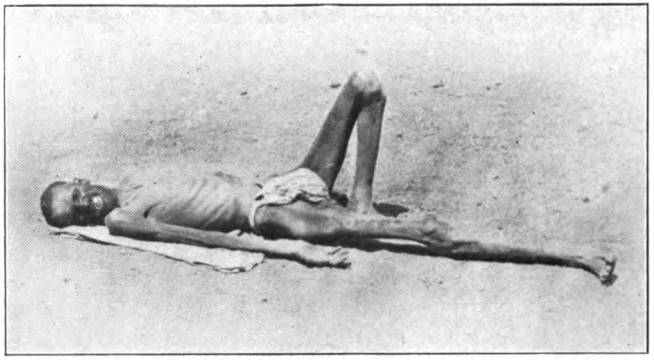
Digitized by Google

educated in a mission school. She was lately married and, although her father is a professional man and calls himself a Christian, he married his daughter to a caste-man and she will pass her days in the dull zenana. Her beauty, which would grace a court, and her intellect are hid away forever.

A French lecturer, in speaking of the condition of the American women, said that if transmigration were true and he had the opportunity of asking the fates what his condition should be when he should return to this world, he would shout and plead with all his power: "Oh! make me an American woman!" So, on the contrary, if I had the privilege of asking what fate of all others I would avoid, I should say to be born in India and a woman!

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



A FAMINE SUBJECT.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XI.

FAMINE.

During the ten years we have lived in India we have witnessed the ravages of two famines. The one in 1896-97 was extremely severe in Central India, and our station, Narsinghpur, was one of the four places most afflicted. To a person in Western lands it is almost impossible to convey an adequate idea of an Indian famine. At the best of times there are so many wretchedly poor people that, to a newcomer from America, it would seem to be always famine here. Thousands upon thousands—nay, even millions in India never eat more than one poor meal a day. Let the crops fail for two seasons, as in 1893-96 and gaunt famine stalks over the land. The old and infirm die, the able-bodied walk long distances to obtain work and the dead and dying are everywhere. The numbers afflicted are so vast that thousands of helping hands are needed to save even a small portion of the afflicted. Orphans swarm in the bazaar and beg piteously for bread, while shut-in high caste, but poverty-stricken women die quietly rather than venture forth.

In 1896 prices of foodstuffs rose higher and higher; beggars increased; there was no work in the fields and soon people began to come in from remote villages to the official centers of districts, hoping the sirkar (government) would help them. The distress increased,

Digitized by Google

till one day we were startled by a mother offering to sell two children. Such propositions, however, soon became common. In some cases hunger seemed to kill every tender feeling. The people became ravenous and would take the food that the children found or begged and eat it themselves. In the last famine at Aligarh the missionaries were obliged to separate the children from the mothers or the latter would take the children's portion of food and eat it themselves. In many, many cases, however, the maternal and paternal love and care overcame hunger, cold and suffering, and the last morsel was given to the children. I shall never forget a Mohammedan father who gave his son to us to care for in the mission. The man had been a small farmer, but there was nothing in his little fields. First he sold the land for food; then his hut; then the cooking vessels, then he and his wife and two boys, one a baby, started forth, they knew not whither. The man brought the boy to us, telling the child he could care for him no longer, although he had always hoped to send him to school, but that now he saw no way to save his life and educate him other than to give him away. The boy was not to think his father did not love him, and, if he lived and learned how to write, he was charged to write to his parents. The father bade him goodbye and, asking nothing for himself, went away. At that time government was doing nothing to relieve the poor. Some months afterwards, poorhouses or sheds were opened and relief-works begun. In the poorhouse here we saw the poor Mohammedan father, and there he died. The little son is doing well in one of the

Digitized by Google

mission-schools. The mother and baby no doubt perished. During the cold season it had been my custom to take morning walks. Often I found dead or dying men and women under trees. The throngs of those begging for bread increased so rapidly that it became impossible to stir outside for recuperation during those trying times of rescue-work. We began giving out a *pice* to each, but could not continue this. By private subscription a sort of kitchen was built and here the poor famine-stricken received one meal a day of coarse, cheap food. Many who had come in from the villages were old and decrepit and often crawled along the roads for miles. These aged people and the children could not masticate the food given, so we had prepared in our own cookhouse some thin gruel which we mixed with milk. As the huge kettle was carried to the kitchen twice a day, the oldest and youngest, many barely able to crawl, would gather around the great vessel holding out bits of earthen dishes, old tin cans or anything they had, to receive some of the warm gruel. So it went on. Children were being gathered in and the sick doctored and soon we had under our own direction three hundred on relief-work and as many more receiving help—corn sent in the good ship from America and clothing from England. My husband was out, both in the cold and hot seasons, overseeing relief-workers, helping on the poorhouse committee, distributing grain to many others besides the seven hundred receiving constant assistance and giving out seed to farmers unable to sow without help. The of-

Digitized by Google

ficials gave me clothing to distribute, as my zenana work made me acquainted with many homes where men could not go to inquire the needs.

Our mission-school of forty or fifty boys soon increased to sixty-five, and then we were full. We rescued almost one thousand children in our own compound and sent detachments to the various schools that asked for them. We looked for a more commodious place in order to enlarge our school and keep the children in their own part of the country. A strong, beautiful building stood nearly opposite our humble school and meeting-place. It was called the "palace" or, in Hindustani, the mahal. It belonged to a petty rajah, who lived some miles away on his estate. He did not seem to care to live in his town-house, and the building had been used for a government office. The story is too long to tell, but suffice it to say that the building became the property of the mission, and, by the aid of relief-workers it was altered somewhat, additional buildings erected, and now it accommodates two hundred and sixty orphan boys, all supported by Christian people in America and England.

Throughout all India you may find these full schools of boys and girls being taught and trained to become useful citizens, and, we trust, noble Christians as well. During the years when the harvest failed in the fields and the orchards refused to give fruit, this harvest of boys and girls was gathered in, and we believe the fruit of these schools will enrich India for centuries.

Digitized by Google

During all the months of famine the labors of missionaries were greatly increased. Some succumbed to the strain and yielded up their lives in the rescue-work. Starvation was not the only horror, for there were many loathsome diseases which were the result of bad and insufficient food. Many people ate leaves, grass seeds and weeds. Some were even seen to sort out undigested grain from the manure of animals. Dysentery, diarrhea, *cancrum-oris* or famine sore-mouth, rickets and ulcers were all about us. We used quarts of salve and ointment, besides other remedies; still the death-rate was very high. Nearly all the cases of *cancrum-oris* proved fatal, but we have a fine looking Brahmin boy who survived the agonies of this disease and is now a healthy lad, full of fun and mischief and learning well at school. His teeth were loose in his jaws and he used to beg me to have them all out, so they would not pain him so badly.

The suffering during a famine cannot be fully described. The home papers were full of pictures and accounts, and generous friends sent money and food and thousands were saved. But oh!—the thousands who suffered and died!

During the famine of 1900 cholera and plague added their terrors in the same districts where the severe scarcity prevailed. In the other famine, plague was raging; but not in those parts of the country devastated by famine. The missionaries assisted nobly in caring for the sick and disposing of the dead. This latter task Hindus and Mohammedans fled from. One missionary personally superintended the burning of

Digitized by Google

seven thousand bodies of those who had died of cholera and starvation, and indirectly assisted at four thousand more burnings. Sometimes in this work he found living people being carried off in the carts with the corpses. The stolid driver, on being expostulated with, merely replied that they would be dead in a few hours and, by taking them now, he would be saved another trip. Sometimes a little muscular Christianity was necessary to make the man give up his living freight.

This sounds too horrible for belief, but I heard the missionary tell the incident myself. Not less awful was the shameless cheating that went on in many of the relief-camps. When millions are to be helped the work must be subdivided many times. Some of the inferior officials who had charge of the kitchens mixed fine earth with the flour in order to keep back part of the amount allowed; many gave much less than the regular allowance; milk was watered and other tricks resorted to in order to make profit over and above their wages. Accustomed to look upon the low-caste and the poor as the rightful prey of those in power, these men could easily extend this doctrine until they were ready to seek their own advantage at the expense of the lives of some of their own caste people.

Unnecessary fines were imposed upon relief-workers and never reported, the sums thus gained finding their way into the pockets of overseers. Some of these shameless officials afterwards actually referred to their gains. In Galveston, Texas, martial law was proclaimed at the time of the awful flood. Human ghouls found pillaging were shot down—but who was to detect these

Digitized by Google

clever swindlers? The poor, famished relief-workers were afraid to breathe a complaint lest they should lose the pittance they were receiving. If, by accident, injustice had been discovered, prosecution would have been almost impossible, for the wretched wronged ones themselves would have been too timid to witness against their oppressors.

What, to such men, were the lives of their poor fellow-creatures? Mahatmas and Sadhus and all their followers know nothing of extending the helping hand to a brother in need. Nay, they do not comprehend the doctrine of brotherhood.

Perhaps the most heartrending sight seen during the famine was that of a little baby trying to draw nourishment from a dead mother's breast. Yet there were even more heartrending things to know about. When mothers offered little girls for sale, and one dared not do such an illegal thing as buy them, we knew some wicked person would nevertheless purchase them for immoral purposes. One mother tried to persuade me to promise three rupees for a beautiful little girl. I did all I could to induce her to give her child to me, intending to assist her afterwards, but I dared not bargain for it.

"What would you do with the three rupees?" I asked the woman.

"Why, eat all I wanted for two or three days and then go drown myself in a well," she said.

A wealthy Mohammedan bought the child, and the mother kept her word.

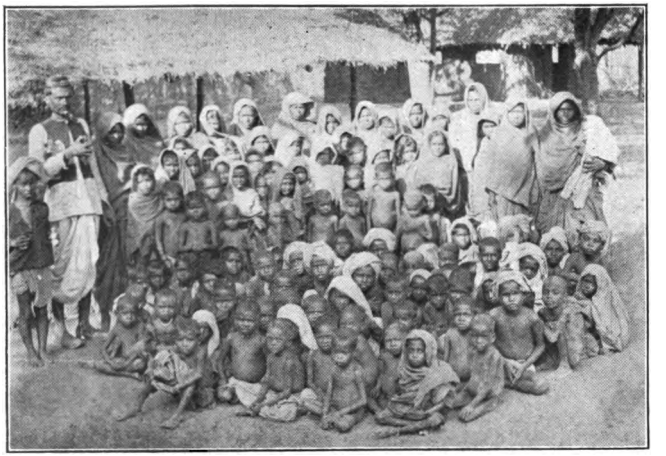
Digitized by Google

The Hindus and the Mohammedans do not enjoy seeing the children gathered into the Christian orphanages. Unwilling themselves to stretch forth a helping hand, they dislike to see the children cared for by Christians, knowing full well what such aid means for the future. One native official had been told by the highest English authority in the district to give forty boys and girls from the poorhouse to a missionary who had asked for them, provided the children wished to go. He tried to forstall the missionary by asking each Hindu child, in an undertone, "Do you wish to go with the Padre and eat cow meat?" But to a Mohammedan boy or girl the crafty fellow would say: "Do you wish to go and eat pork?" In this way he succeeded in intimidating some.

Many stories were circulated intended to terrify the people and excite them against the Christians. Some were actually made to believe that the missionaries took out the children's eyes to make medicine from them. Doing nothing, and caring not at all themselves, they would fain prevent the missionaries also in the work of rescue. Many widows and deserted wives were taken in and given homes and taught some useful employment. Thousands of homes were broken up and villages deserted. The very landscape tells the story of desolation. Beautiful trees have fallen or stand bare and dead in the path of gaunt famine. Gujerat, called one of the garden-spots of India, is a dried and bleak-looking waste.

Thousands are praying, some to dumb idols of wood and stone, some to the living God, that the early and

Digitized by Google



GROUP OF FAMINE CHILDREN AND NINE WOMEN WHO CARED FOR THEM IN GOVERNMENT POOR HOUSE.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

the later rains may not fail again and that India may never more be visited by this awful affliction. Many say it is because of India's gross wickedness that she suffers thus. But oh!—the little children, the young, young children crying for bread! May a merciful God stay this sore affliction!

STARVATION IN THE ZENANAS.

Most people suppose that all the "purdah women" —that is, high-caste women who are shut-in or secluded—must be well-to-do. This is a mistake. A beggar may be a Brahmin, who, while asking an alms of you, yet religiously despises you as the off-scouring of the earth. Moneyed aristocracy has no place here. A man may amass a fortune and live like a prince, but if born low-caste he is still low-caste. In a little hovel, screened from view by a coarse piece of sacking hung in the doorway, may live a high-caste woman, "born to the purple" in Hindu society, but so poor that she is wasted to skin and bone from lack of food. Such a one said to me:

"One meal a day of plain rice, Mem Sahib, and often not that. My husband has no work since the famine and my little baby died because I had no milk to give it."

Another asked us to talk to her from behind a door. "I am nearly naked, Mem Sahib. All the clothes have been sold to buy food. The stomach cannot go empty, even if the back must go bare."

When I took the clothing sent from England for these women some even cried with joy, they felt so bit-

Digitized by Google

terly ashamed to be seen in the rags to which they were reduced. To carry grain to these homes was very hard work. Some was given out by government; but, considering the difficulty of men finding out the condition of these secluded women, you will see how hard it was to reach them with help. Only women could really do this work. In the stress of famine many were allowed to go out of their homes, provided they went where women only were to be seen. Knowing this, two of us made the attempt to give out American grain in the back yard of one of my Bible-women's houses. We let in a few at a time and measured to each a certain number of quarts of corn and beans. We soon realized the difficulty of dealing with the poor, famished creatures. We could not let them out again until all had been served and what a scene of confusion that little muddy yard presented! The struggles at the gate to get in were bad enough and, doubtless, we pinched many poor fingers badly as we shut the gate after each detachment of ten entered. Then, if any grain fell, who could prevent the scramble for every kernel? It was pitiful, indeed! By evening we as well as the Bible-women were almost overdone by the labor and confusion. Among this seething mass there were few of the highest castes. Many never complained. Their honor, religion and future life depend on the strict observance of caste. To go on the government relief-work, or worse still, to be fed in the poorhouse, meant the loss of all; so, far better to die and keep everything precious but life! Even without the terrors of caste before our eyes, most of us would prefer to

Digitized by Google

die rather than to be fed in the government poorsheds, among the sick, the halt, the blind, the filthy and diseased. Some respectable people were there, but respectability was no longer to be distinguished, so wretched had they all become.

Many temptations were in the way of the sufferers. A Mohammedan woman of the upper class was left a widow at this time. She had no means of support; she could not go out to work; she did not know how to do sewing even if any could have been procured for her. She told us that she wanted to live only with her children, but what was she to do? A relative of her husband's sent her word to come to his house as the third of his living wives. This meant protection, food, and clothing for herself and little ones and respectability in Mohammedan society. So she went to the strange town in her long veil and entered the house as another downtrodden moslem concubine.

After money came for helping these women some were taught to sew and coarse work was cut out and given to them from many mission-centers. It was a tedious task to teach these unaccustomed fingers to do even plain sewing and most of the lessons had to be given in their homes, in close, dingy quarters, and often in stifling heat.

When clothing was distributed the applicants, who on the ground of poverty had equal claims, were so numerous that it was very hard to decide where to bestow one's gifts. Most of the women in these shut-in houses live at best in very rough and barren rooms, with neither chairs nor tables—or at best, one unpaint-

Digitized by Google

ed one—no pictures on the walls and no carpets on the mud floors. There are only one or two beds, called charpoys, with coarsely woven rope across and the wooden part consisting of four poles and four posts. A few cooking-vessels and a rough brick or mud stove complete her possessions, with the addition of a wooden box containing a little clothing and a smaller one for the few trinkets she possesses. This is in prosperous time. But when famine stalks abroad and grainstuffs double and treble in price, the little earnings of the father and sons are insufficient to keep the wolf from the door of the little hut. Often employment fails altogether and the men wander away to new towns in search of work, while the women sit at home and wait, bake their last loaf, drain the last drop of oil from the cruse, and then lie down and die. The little ones wander aimlessly forth to beg or die or sometimes to be rescued by missionaries. People in America often say: "Is famine really so bad as represented?" Far, far worse than any pen can describe! Abstain from food for two whole days; drink muddy ditch-water; eat decaying vegetables; pick up grain around a barnyard and then, on the fifth or sixth day, write your experiences! As bad as represented? Men and women and little children die by the roadside and under trees; parents sell their babies; women leap into wells and Satan's emissaries profit by saving from starvation the prettiest of the little orphan girls. Is all this as bad as represented? Can anything be worse except war, rapine and murder? And are these really worse, or only speedier in their results?

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

RESCUED FAMINE CHILDREN AT DINNER.

Digitized by Google

The only relief to this dark picture of famine among the low and the high is the grand opportunity it affords missionaries to train thousands of orphans thus thrust upon them. Some are educated to be teachers and preachers, but the majority are taught useful trades and employments, while the girls are prepared to be housewives and intelligent companions of Christian men. But the greatest opportunity is that of guiding so many during their impressionable years to the true light and life of men. It is not enough merely to save the perishing bodies, but the bread of life must be fed to hungry souls, thus to raise up an industrious, God-fearing community, which may do much to bring prosperity to overcrowded, poverty-stricken India. May it not be that out of the darkness of woe and famine shall shine the true "Light of Asia?"

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XII.

A COUNTRY WEDDING IN INDIA.

While on a preaching tour in the villages my husband had the opportunity of attending a country wedding and finding out all the modus operandi of marriage arrangements among these people. The son of the Patel (headman of the village) was the child-groom and the little bride belonged to a neighboring village. Seven dinners were given in connection with the great event. At one of these my husband was a guest. The company seated numbered three hundred. All ate from plates made of leaves pinned together with little sticks or thorns. The food was rice, cooked with spices and served with curry—a sort of stew, with very hot and varied seasoning. All ate with their fingers.

The boy was about nine years of age, and of course, it was time to get him married. So, some months previous to this, his father began the preliminary arrangements, or the courtship by proxy. He went about the various villages, apparently on business, but really to spy out a suitable bride for his promising son. He saw many little girls playing about, and, while apparently talking of the weather, the crops and what not, he kept a sharp lookout on the little maids. Some were not pretty enough; some did not appear sufficiently bright; some were not of his caste; some

Digitized by Google

were of his caste, pretty and intelligent, but of families not high enough in social circles, nor possessed of sufficient wealth. Finally in a village a mile away, he saw a little girl, five years old, who seemed to satisfy the conditions. Her father was in proper standing and had some property. Then followed the usual series of formalities. The boy's father, without saying a word about marriage, slips away to his home, and, gathering together a few of his near relatives, opens his mind to them. They discuss the matter and approve. (Should they disapprove the matter is settled for that girl.) The *Panchayat,* or council of five, of that particular caste are then called together. If they disapprove, this again stops all proceedings. With their sanction, the Brahmin soothsayer is summoned. He also has the power to terminate the affair by declaring the stars unfavorable. The Brahmin reads something from a book. No one understands it and he will allow none to see the page. If the report of the stars is favorable, he says: "Yes, all is propitious, Anoint the boy and girl on a certain day, and on certain other days, give such and such dinners." Then he takes his fee and departs. Next the father of the boy calls the barber of the village and sends him to the parents of the girl. He states the case thus: The boy's parents are willing, relatives approve, *Panchayat* and Brahmin and the stars all agree. All then proceed to discuss the matter, the barber extolling the boy and his relatives. If the girl's parents consent the marriage arrangements proceed. If they withhold their approval the matter

Digitized by Google

ends. The girl's parents have the same privilege as those of the boy to take the initiative in the whole proceeding.

The barber returns in great glee if he has secured the consent of the girl's parents. The news is spread and everything considered settled. When the anointing day arrives the barber goes to the boy's house and, removing his clothes, with the assistance of near relatives, anoints him with oil and *haldi* (turmeric) and then gives him a bath. New clothes are put on the boy, while the barber keeps the old ones as his perquisites. The anointing is repeated in the evening by the same people, but this time it is not followed by a bath. The boy sleeps in the oil and *haldi*. In the morning another anointing occurs and a second bath.

Now comes the planting of the post. First, four posts of any kind are set in the ground, at any desired distance apart; but so as to make a square. Over the top cross-poles a covering of leaves and branches is placed. Under this is planted the special post, often carved and colored in various tints, especially red or green. The boy has a thin post; the girl, at her home, a thick one. This post is set by the boy's father, and the father's sister's husband. In the evening a small *khana* or dinner is given to a few near relatives. Similar anointing, bathing and post-planting is also going on at the girl's house, conducted by the wife of the barber of her village and the relatives.

The third day arrives and great preparations are made at the boy's house for the evening khana. Many broad plates, made of leaves pinned together with bits

Digitized by Google

of wood, and little bowls constructed in the same way, are gathered in, which have been prepared by the barber's wife. Large baskets, too, from which to distribute the khana, pallao, curry, greens and sweetmeats are being made ready. Toward evening guests from other villages begin to arrive and stop at various houses. This wedding was among the Kirar caste, to which nearly the entire population of the village of Kairua belongs. These have all been invited some days previously by the barber's wife, through whom all invitations must be sent. At about 6 P. M. this same important personage passed around the village saying: "*Khana taiyar hai.*" (The dinner is ready.) The people began to straggle leisurely along. Some remained talking; some finished their milking, or other work. There is no hurry, for they know that not all can sit down at once.

The ubiquitous barber's wife had invited the one Christian family there, and my husband and the native preachers with him, to come to the dinner. They replied that they should be glad to do so, provided no filthy songs were sung and no obscene conversation indulged in. These people think, if these so-called wedding songs are not sung, and this vulgar talk carried on, that the wedding is not at all a success.

About 8 o'clock the boy's uncle came to call the party of Christians. He said: "I have ordered all singing and filthy talking stopped while you are present." They went with him and everything was propriety itself. The Sahib was served first, afterwards the native Christians. They gave the Sahib a little

Digitized by Google

stool to sit on, but all the other guests had been seated on the ground. The food was disposed of with the aid of fingers only. The dinner was cold and served outside the house under the stars by the light of a few small flickering lamps. The men of the company had eaten before my husband arrived; the women were yet to eat. After a half-hour's chat the little company retired, leaving the wedding-party to complete their ceremonies. With their departure the singing and usual talking began, but in a subdued way. A new idea had been received.

After the women had eaten, the near relatives of the boy's mother gave her a new suit of clothes. Neither the girl-bride nor her parents attend the various khanas at the boy's house, but other relatives of the girl attend. At the time of this big khana a little khana at the girl's house was given to near relatives, and her mother also received a new suit of clothes.

About 4 o'clock in the morning, after the great dinner, the crowd, including the boy and his parents, left for Kacharkona, the village of the bride. The bride received a gift of about 250 rupees' worth of jewelry from her father-in-law. Fireworks were discharged and there was singing, conversation and sleep until about noon, when the guests were again summoned to a meal. Nearly all bathed and then sat down to a great feast. In the evening there was another khana, followed by the real marriage ceremony. The boy and girl were seated side by side, the girl on the right. Then the girl's father's sister's husband took

Digitized by Google

the corners of their clothes and tied them together, and a Brahmin soothsayer read something unintelligible. After this the boy and girl ran round the post seven times, the girl leading. When they were again seated, a large brass pan was put before them and the guests filed by, throwing into the pan their gifts—two annas, four annas, a rupee, or pieces of jewelry—each one touching the feet of the bride and the groom. This done the knot was loosed by the same uncle who had tied it. The little girl ran into her house and the programme for that day was ended. The guests slept in verandas, under trees or whereever they chose. The next day there was another big khana for them to eat. At this dinner *batassa,* a native candy, was distributed by the boy's father to all the women in the company. The girl's father now presented this new son-in-law with a buffalo cow and calf, a large brass water-pot, etc. On this sixth day of festivities, the guests returned to the boy's father's house, accompanied by the girl, in a *palki,* and the boy on a horse, where he is held by a man riding the same animal. This procession was a noisy one, being escorted by the musicians, who rattle and bang on primitive instruments at intervals through all their lengthy ceremonies. The guests were all gathered together again in the evening for another feast. On the seventh day the boy and girl were again tied together by the boy's father's sister's husband and then proceeded to a *debi* (idol) and poured *ghi* and *gurh* (butter and common sugar) upon it and bowed themselves be-

Digitized by Google

fore it. Returning to the boy's house, his father sends the girl home with a proper escort and a huge basket of khana and sweets.

This completed the marriage ceremony. The little five-year-old girl was to remain in her own father's house until of a proper age to join her husband. This proper age, so-called, is in India as low as eleven or twelve years, and mothers of twelve or thirteen are common.

When the girl's father wishes to send her to her husband, he will send word to that effect. An escort will be sent for her, composed of the boy's father and some relatives, who bring sweets for the women. Each member of the escort receives from the bride's father a rupee and a piece of cloth. Then the little bride will go with them, taking with her as much khana as she brought home from her first visit to her father-in-law's house. Now she is a full-fledged wife in her husband's family.

HIGH-CASTE OR BRAHMINICAL MARRIAGE.

In ancient or Aryan times, infant-marriage was not the rule, and marriage was not performed until a man and woman were able to live in a house of their own. According to Manu and other writers on religious matters, it was not sinful to postpone marriage until three years after puberty. The young Brahmin, after his initiation or investiture with the sacred thread, lived for several years with a religious instructor and only after his "Return" was he allowed to take a wife and become a householder. The ceremony was simpler than at

Digitized by Google

present. The grinding-stone (for curry and similar articles) was placed west of the sacred fire and the water jar was placed northeast. The bridegroom offered an oblation and held the bride's hand. If he wished for sons only he clasped (as described by Sir Monier Williams) her thumbs, if for daughters, the fingers alone. Then the bride was led by the bridegroom, toward the right, three times around the fire and around the waterjar. As he led her he repeated:

"I am male, thou art female. Come, let us marry; let us possess offspring; united in affection, illustrious, well-disposed toward each other, let us live for a hundred years." Every time he made the circle he caused her to ascend the mill-stone and said: "Ascend this stone, be thou firm as a rock."

The bride's brother then put melted butter on the palms of her hands and scattered parched rice over them. An oblation of the butter was made to the fire and the marriage-hymn was sung. Then the bridegroom unloosed the braided tresses of hair tied on the top of the bride's head, repeating a Vedic text: "I loose thee from the fetters of Varuna with which the very auspicious Savitri has bound thee." Then he directed her to take seven steps toward the northeast, saying as she walked: "Take one step to acquire force, two for strength, three for the increase of wealth, four for well-being, five for offspring, six for the seasons and seven as a friend; be faithfully devoted to me; may we obtain many sons; may they attain to a good old age." Then, putting their heads near together, both were sprinkled with water from the jar.

Digitized by Google

The sacred fire was produced by friction of two pieces of consecrated wood called *arani,* and this fire which witnessed their union, was brought by the young couple to their home.

The modern Brahminical marriage ceremonies, for there are three distinct observances, are each complicated and expensive. The initiation of the boy, or his investiture with the Brahminical thread, is followed by a formal performance of the rite called "Return," and he spends no time with a teacher. Two or three days afterward, the second marriage ceremony is celebrated. The little girl, or rather baby-wife, has been chosen for him, and the first, or betrothal-ceremony has already been complied with. Now, at the age of nine or ten, the second, or legal ceremony is observed. Beginning all of these there is feasting and noisy music, followed at numerous intervals by more feasting and music. After all is finished there is again feasting, some wedding celebrations occasioning from seven to twelve grand dinners, with almost unlimited charitable hospitality in the giving out of food to the poor who assemble at the gates.

The real ceremony begins with the night procession of the bridegroom to the house of the bride. Then follows the tying of the consecrated cloth. One end of it is fastened to the bridegroom's dress and the other to that of the bride's. Sometimes the garments themselves are tied together. The hands of the young couple are joined under this cloth, red marks are made on their faces by ladies of the family, and garlands of flowers thrown over their heads. The red marks refer

Digitized by Google

to a legend of the gods, too revolting to be recited here and happily understood by very few who use the symbols. The priests then take a sacred cord and wind it round the necks of the bridegroom and bride, joining them thus together while muttering Vedic texts. The bridegroom's hands are then placed in milk and sprinklings of red powder, rice grains, cocoanut milk and water follow. In another room more red marks are applied and money presented by the bridegroom. They return to the first room, where four earthen pots have been placed in the four corners of the tent, most of the ceremonies being performd in a tent or booth erected for the purpose. The couple walk around the tent four times and throw barley, betel-nuts and oil seeds into the consecrated fire which has been lighted during their absence. The priests throw in ghee, and the seven steps around the fire are taken as in the ancient ceremony. This ceremony is twenty-five hundred years old and, with slight modifications and more elaborate ritual, is really the same as observed to-day.

Minor ceremonies continue for eight days. On the eighth the bride and bridegroom go together to worship at a temple—it may be of Lakshmi, goddess of prosperity, or of some other favorite god or goddess.

In all these weddings the wishes of the two principal actors are never consulted, parental law and custom or better, caste, ruling all. Dancing, noisy music and continuous feasting characterize the weddings of the wealthy, which the poorer high-caste families imitate as nearly as they can. Often the savings of a

Digitized by Google

whole life-time are spent, many rich people spending $50,000 or even more on a single wedding. Woe be to the family whose birth and social rank is high and grand, while their purse is low and humble! To meet the demands of rank, debt is incurred which is often not yet paid by grand-children, for a man not only inherits rank and wealth or rank without wealth, but he falls heir to debts as well. One good result of this extravagance at weddings is that, although, it is lawful for a Hindu of high caste to have more than one wife, the expense forbids it. Hence peace is preserved in many families.

The dancing girls, or "Nautch" girls, sing the loves, quarrels and reconciliations of Krishna and his wives or mistresses. As a rule these songs are most indecent. Many otherwise refined people will permit this, believing it to be essential to the success of a wedding. The jewels and trousseau of the bride in wealthy families are fabulous. In many cases the first order for wedding-jewels is given at the time of betrothal.

The third ceremony of marriage is when the bride's home-coming to the husband's family occurs. Strangers, seeing these processions nearing the house, and hearing the loud wailing of the little bride, are greatly stirred at such a cruel custom. Yet, while there are, no doubt, more weeping brides than smiling ones, it is etiquette to weep and lament at leaving one's father's house. Many brides, immediately after the second or legal ceremony, go to be inmates of their husband's home, even though he may yet be at school or away at college. At the proper age she becomes his actual

Digitized by Google

wife and—alas! too often at an improper age, for the rule is in India to blossom early and fade young. Many boys in school are already fathers. There is indeed no proper founding of a home, no real individual family life; a sort of common shelter only with individual wives. And where a mother-in-law and four, five or more daughters-in-law live in one house, whether large or small, there is usually very little love or happiness—at best a stolid endurance, at worst discord and discontent. There may be jewels, rich carpets, silver and brass, but it is difficult to cultivate the meek and quiet spirit, and almost impossible to capture Joy in such a household.

MOHAMMEDAN WEDDING.

Mohammedan girls are usually betrothed between the ages of twelve and sixteen and the marriage occurs soon after. Some are betrothed even younger. As in the case of the Hindus, the barber and his wife are employed as match-makers, the man making all arrangements among the men and his wife acting as go-between among the women of the two families. When the parents on both sides are satisfied, an invitation is issued by the bridegroom and his family to their friends to accompany them to the bride's house with gifts. These presents consist of two rings, gold or silver, as financial circumstances permit; a quantity of sweetmeats called *batassas,* a suit of clothes and one rupee, one anna in coin. The prospective mother-in-law places five or seven handfuls of batassas, with the rupee, in the girl's lap. The one anna (worth two

Digitized by Google

cents) is passed over the girl's head and then given to the barber's wife. Then the inevitable *pan supari* is distributed. This is chopped betel-nut, spices, lime, and catchu rolled up in a fresh pän leaf, or betel leaf and pinned with a clove. This, in India, takes the place of tea, and is the expression for hospitality. Even at feasts it has its place and lends the finishing touch to every entertainment.

After the bride receives her gifts, the compliment is returned and the bridegroom-elect is given a new pugri, a handkerchief, two rings and the one rupee and anna in money, the anna going to the barber.

This gift ceremony is called the *Mangni* or asking, At this time the date is fixed for the wedding, which may take place a week, a month, or a year afterwards.

Before the real marriage there are great preparations at the house of the bride. Fritters of flour, sugar and ghee are fried and rice-cakes and other toothsome things are prepared. The whole night prior to the wedding, servants and retainers are busy cooking and baking.

At midday the *Kazi*, or religious judge, arrives, accompanied by the friends of the bridegroom, bringing gifts of jewelry, brass cooking-utensils, clothing, money, etc.

The girl sits behind the purdah, or curtain, with her parents. The Käzi and bridegroom take their places some distance away, in front of the curtain. Two men, chosen as witnesses, now approach the purdah and ask the girl if she will accept them as witnesses. After receiving a muffled affirmative, the chief question is

Digitized by Google

asked—whether she is willing to take the man whom her parents have chosen for her as her lawful husband. Again a muffled consent is received, and this is reported to the Käzi and the bridegroom. The witnesses are sent back three times to make certain of the answer. After this is settled the parents come to terms, through these same witnesses, as to what they are to pay or receive in case one of the contracting parties deserts the other. In well-to-do homes this is a large sum.

After this the Käzi reads from the Korän in regard to the duties of marriage, and finally pronounces them man and wife. Up to this time the young couple have not seen each other. In the evening the bride is carried in a palanquin to her husband's house, the bridegroom accompanying the procession on horseback. Native bands and quantities of fireworks enliven the procession. The introduction of the bride and groom takes place by means of a mirror, which is held before the bride's face, the young husband looking over her shoulder. If displeased, he may console himself with the thought that the second venture may prove more agreeable, but for the bride there is no mitigation of possible disappointment.

The wedding garments and jewelry of both bride and groom, among the rich, are quite magnificent, costing thousands of rupees. The gold and silver tinsel and gems which sometimes encrust the velvet coats and other garments make the trousseau very dazzling. For several weeks after the marriage the bride sits daily on a charpoy, or bedstead, for inspection by female visitors. Each one may get a glimpse of her face

Digitized by Google

from among the sheets which cover her crouching figure at the price of a small coin, which is first placed in her hand.

After all this formality the new bride takes her place in the composite family, consisting of father and mother-in-law, the unmarried sisters of her husband and perhaps one or two married brothers and their wives. In many houses these women manage to live out of sight of all the men except their own husbands, keeping real purdah. In others the letter of the law is observed, while the spirit is broken; but there is seldom or never any of the real beauty of home. Most of the brides have a rough path before them; especially those who find two or more wives already occupying the dwelling and heart of the newly wedded husband.

The beauty and glamour surrounding the bride and groom in their new home in Christian lands do not shine under tropical skies beneath the sanction of Moslem rites.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIII.

THE HILL COUNTRY.

The various hill-stations in India might be called life-saving posts.

Every province has its official headquarters during the summer in one of these delightful resorts. The Viceroy and cabinet go to Simla; the Northwest provinces have Naini Tal; the Madras governor and suite choose Ootacamund, in the Nilgiri Hills; Bombay has Mahableshwar in the western ghats, and the central provinces, Pachmarhi. This latter is only three thousand eight hundred feet high and, while the climate is far superior to that of the sultry plains, yet it is not cold enough to conserve the vitality of those already greatly debilitated by living on the lower levels. There are many other hill resorts. Simla, Mussoorie and Darjeeling are the most noted of the sanitariums of the Himalayas. Darjeeling was the scene of the awful landslides which cost so much life in 1899.

In India we look literally "to the hills from whence cometh our help." After having lived here for six years without a vacation, we felt that we must, for the sake of the little ones, go away to the Himalayas and secure a breath of air which had blown over the everlasting snows. So we took our journey through central and north India and finally reached Saharranpur,

Digitized by Google

where the railway ended. From thence, by night traveling, in an uncomfortable *tonga,* we journeyed to Rajpur. Then we took "dandies," a sort of palanquin, and were carried up the sharp ascent of seven miles. Looking back, as we circled around some sharp curve, we could see the second dandy following below. Sometimes we seemed hanging over an unfathomable abyss. The air grew cooler and cooler. More wraps were donned and at length we reached Mussoorie, or more correctly Mun-suri (delectable mountain).

The scenery was grand in the extreme. One morning I took a long ramble alone around a peak called "Camel's Back." Suddenly, at a turn of the road, with a perpendicular wall on the inside and a fearful precipice on the outer edge, straight in front of me, I saw the distant snow-peaks, dazzling white and tinted with rosy red in the beams of the rising sun. I had not seen snow for six years and, forgetting everything but the glory of the scene, I shouted: "The snows, the snows, the everlasting snows!" It was a moment of ecstasy. Never after, during all the three months of our stay, was the air clear enough for another such view. Everything seems perpendicular in Mussoorie. No horse or bullock conveyance can be used on the precipitous roads. Only dandies, jampäns and jinrickshas are to be seen. There is constant climbing. For children, the roads are very dangerous and almost every year one or more fall over the steeps, sometimes never to be found, as the wild beasts below reach them before the hill-men can descend. A fall of this sort is always

Digitized by Google

fatal, since the slope is so precipitous that nothing prevents the body from repeated blows until life is extinct.

There are hotels in all these hill-stations, many plain boarding-houses and an occasional mission-sanitarium. Some missionaries cannot endure the climate on the plains for more than a year before they require a short change to the hills; others can remain four, five or six years, while still others never go to the higher lands at all. The children suffer most from the heat and malaria of the plains. Most of the English officials send their wives and children to the hills every year, even when they themselves cannot go.

If missionaries had this healthful change more frequently many lives would be lengthened for service. It sometimes seems as though people at home approve of martyrdom in the case of missionaries, for we sometimes hear unfavorable criticism of these hill-journeys. This is, indeed, martyrdom by proxy. Many here even incur debt in order to get to the hills to save a loved one's life. Come to India, dear friends, and see; but let it not be in the cool season. Be sure to remain through April, May and June. Stay two seasons, if possible, for very few realize the full power of the heat the first season. Most of us find it harder to endure from year to year, as our systems become more debilitated. By the third hot season we fancy all our visitors would also be "going to the hills" and their most ardent longing would be for a glimpse of the snows, the everlasting snows.

Digitized by Google

As we ascended we seemed to find the air purer and purer, leaving miasma and disease far below. Then, even in Mussoorie, we could look away to the dazzling heights still above us. So, we thought, our souls may climb height after height—and yet, far away, is the throne of eternal whiteness—not cold like these beautiful peaks, but fair and lovely in the light and love of God.

One season I spent in Pachmarhi with the children. Here you can use bullock-tongas and other conveyances, as the place is on a beautiful plateau. Short walks bring you to lovely rocks and deep ravines, mountain streams and lovely waterfalls. Very few people are here except officials of the central provinces. Two missions have sanitariums here—one Lake View, on a tiny sheet of water, and Riverside, where we were entertained, beside a pretty river. In this station the *Sahib log,* as the English are called, have polo-grounds and race-courses, and amuse themselves in many other ways while absent from official duties. Tennis-courts and badminton grounds are attached to most of the houses. Every Tuesday the chief commissioner gives a garden party in his beautiful grounds, to which the missionaries as well as the English officials are invited.

Pachmarhi is a most homelike place. Its beautiful ahmiltäs trees with their masses of golden bloom are among its chief beauties. There is a government garden there, to the expense of which all subscribe, and every day a basket of fresh fruit and vegetables is

Digitized by Google

brought to every house. The garden itself is a lovely place for strolls and full of quiet nooks in which to read. Naini Tal, Simla and Darjeeling are similar to Mussoorie, though the scenery is perhaps grandest at Darjeeling. From there the lofty crest of Mount Everest may be seen in its dazzling garb of white.

But nothing we have seen can compare to beautiful Ootacamund, or "Ooty," as it is familiarly called. The scenery is not so grand as in the Himalayas, but for verdure, beautiful roads, easy climbing and blooming plants, it excels all. From where we lived one could look away over sloping green hills to the golden gates of the sinking sun. The officials go out on the downs to hunt foxes and across the downs, away twelve miles to Pykara Falls, is a drive unrivaled for exquisite beauty.

To go out for a day's strolling, with one or two for company, is something to remember when you return to your work on the plains. Two of us set off one day with a few biscuits and an orange in each pocket and staid out eight hours. We drank of a spring up on Snowdon; gathered mushrooms and wild strawberries and the soft-looking gray vegetable coral; strolled through tea-gardens, through the government cinchona plantations, into thick groves of eucalyptus trees, with their sprucy odors; through mossy dingles and over smooth slopes, and finally reached home, after having drunk fully of Nature's sweetness and laid by for all our lives a store of remembered beauty. Here and there we came upon exquisite views of the dwelling-

Digitized by Google

portion of Ooty, and it looked as beautiful as human mind could conceive the New Jerusalem in prophet's vision.

Ah! yes, to the hills, to the everlasting hills, weary toiler on the plains of India, and weary toilers on the plains of life! 'Tis true the work, the endurance, the casting out of demons, lies below the mount; but let us ascend now and again and breathe the purer, loftier air of the earthly and heavenly summits. So shall our bodies endure the time of conflict, our minds and spirits remain calm in the tumults and from the other heights of prayer and faith our souls be equipped for further flight, some wondrous day.

PEOPLE OF THE HILLS.

In the Himalayas there is a sturdy, independent race of men. They have little land-holdings here and there in the mountains, but come during the summer months to the health resorts to find remunerative toil. They are a rough, unkempt, dirty-looking people, but their manners are entirely different from the cringing behavior of the coolie on the plains. A lady was being carried along in a jampan by four of these hill coolies. She had complained a great deal all the way, and they finally set her down, declaring she must promise to stop scolding or else pay them extra for listening to her. She prevailed on them to go on after swallowing her pride sufficiently to give a feeble assurance, but no sooner was she on the way again than she resumed her lamentations. They promptly put her down, demanding a fine because she had not kept her word, which, being unable to walk, she was forced to pay. These

Digitized by Google

men are fine climbers and, having learned how much the hill-ferns in their countless varieties are prized by visitors, they bring them, with quantities of orchids and other flowers, to the hotels and boarding places for sale. They often descend the precipitous cliffs to search for children who have fallen over.

Very different from these independent men are the Gonds, the aboriginals who inhabit the low hills in the central provinces. They are a hunted and down-trodden people. From the early Aryan times they have been used to being beaten back into the hills before the encroachments of the fairer and more aggressive Aryans. They are ignorant and wild, following primitive agriculture as a livelihood and herding a few cattle and goats to eke out their subsistence. Their experience of oppression has led them to conclude that power is always associated with a desire to destroy or maltreat; thus their religion is a sort of devil-worship. They hope by offerings and ceremonies pleasing to the evil spirit to ward off his malevolent designs and so to live in peace. They have a most humble opinion of themselves. When Mr. Lampard went to begin missionary work among them they could not comprehend his motives and suspected him for some time. When they became convinced that he did not mean to harm them, but had come for their good, to teach them about a God who did not hate, but loved even such wild children of the hills as themselves, their astonishment knew no bounds. "Why," they said, "of what use is it to try to teach us; we are only monkey-men. Better leave us in our jungles."

Digitized by Google

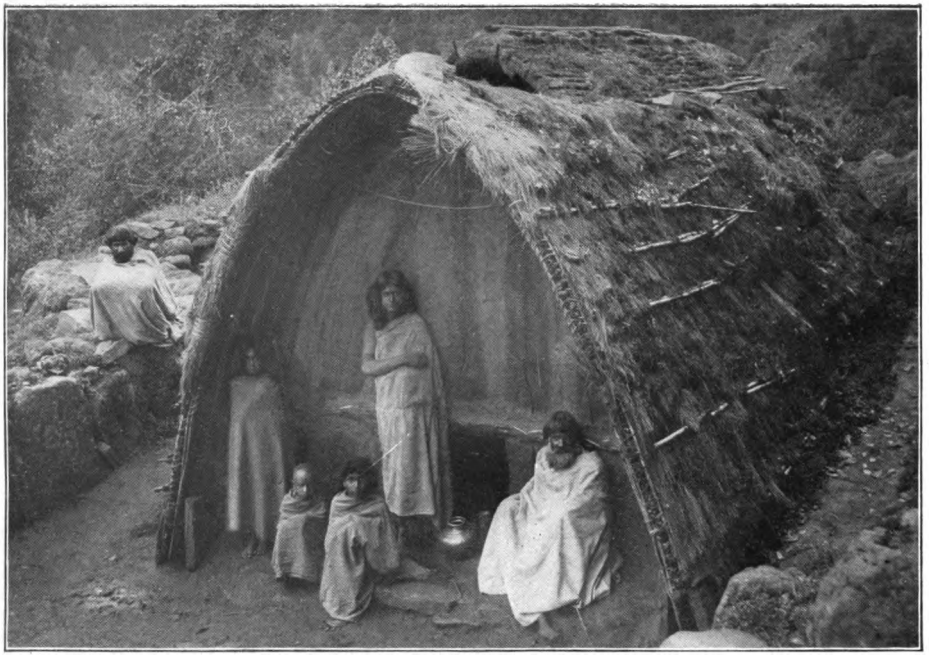
During the famine these poor people suffered terribly. Having only their little fields to depend upon, when the evil spirit dried up the clouds and parched the young grain and the grass, what were they to do? Many toiled on the government relief-works. But after fathers and mothers had died and the little hut was gone, with not even a cooking-pot left, boys and girls wandered into the towns and were taken to the poor-sheds to be fed, or gathered into the mission-compounds which stood hospitably open. Now, many dark, rough-featured little Gonds are standing in the orphanages beside the fair, aristocratic Brahmin boys and girls who were also orphaned during those dark times. They will no doubt go back to the hills some day—but let us believe that it will be to plant Christian homes and villages and bring the Christian God of love to the "monkey-men" who now fear only hobgoblins and evil spirits.

THE TODAS OF THE NILGIRI HILLS.

The great variety of people and languages found in India is difficult for a foreigner to comprehend. Many writers describe the characteristics of "A native of India," forgetting that there is almost as much difference between the Bengali and the Punjäbi as there is between the Spaniard and the Scotchman.

Perhaps no other of the many peoples of this empire has been so little heard of or written about as the Todas of the Nilgiri hills; yet they are very interesting and totally distinguished from any other tribe or caste in customs, worship and physique.

Digitized by Google



GROUP OF TODAS AND THEIR DWELLING.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

To see them roaming these hills, herding the buffaloes they love so much, clothed only in a single flowing cloth thrown about their bodies, one might conclude that they were nomadic and almost wild. But their little groups of mound-shaped huts are permanent homes. These tiny villages are called *munds,* and a visit to a "Toda mund" is one of the prescribed entertainments for all visitors to these hills.

The women and children are usually found alone, with perhaps one or two old priests sitting about. The men are off on the beautiful downs pasturing their herds. A dairy-temple and a buffalo enclosure are found in each mund.

Strangers are not allowed to enter these temples or even to look into them. They are called "dairy-temples" because used for ceremonies connected with buffalo-worship. Great quantities of milk and *ghee* (clarified butter) are used as offerings to their gods, the uncouth animals they tend and worship. The Todas admit that in some temples there are images, but of what sort they do not tell. In some way these must also be related to buffaloes, for all a Toda's thoughts and affections cling about these creatures. All their songs are about the buffaloes, and anything more uncanny than these songs, sung by a dozen or more women with lips nearly closed, is hard to imagine.

The temples are of the same shape as the dwelling-hut shown in the picture. While they would not allow us to enter the temples, we were allowed to crawl on our hands and knees through the low aperture leading into the dwelling. The one we entered we found very

Digitized by Google

clean and tidy, although everything was well seasoned with smoke, as there is no opening for it to escape except the low door.

Most people admire the appearance of these people. Almost all of them have very beautiful, long, silky, curling hair—even the men—and their bodies are strong and well formed. They are, however, as a people, rapidly passing away. They now number, all told, only seven hundred, and we cannot wonder when we know that the revolting custom of polyandry exists among them. They are probably the only people known who retain this practice.

Should a Toda decide to become a Christian he would find it extremely difficult. His wife he must leave forever, for she is the joint wife of himself and his brothers. Harder still, he must leave what is far dearer to a Toda's heart than his wife, his beloved buffaloes, which are also owned in common by his brothers and himself. He could claim no children, and, with buffaloes, occupation, wife, children and home gone, he would be a veritable waif.

The Todas know nothing of their origin. So far as I can ascertain those who work among them know quite as little on that point. The Todas themselves say they have always lived in these hills and owned their buffaloes. They wear but one garment—a loosely arranged blanket of cotton or wool.

The great event toward which a Toda's thought and care are directed is his funeral. Before the English regulated the sacrificing of the buffaloes there used to be a perfect carnage of the sacred animals. For, al-

Digitized by Google

SACRIFICING A BUFFALO AT A TODA FUNERAL.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

though the Toda worships his herds, yet he uses them for sacrifices, not revering their life as the Hindu does that of the sacred bull and cow. The number killed at a funeral depends on the rank and wealth of the dead Toda. These animals are not in the least docile, and often in capturing them a young Toda is killed and then there is another funeral and more buffaloes sacrificed. There are two funeral services, one being held a year after the death occurs. The women sit before the dead Toda's hut, singing their weird songs. At ten o'clock in the day a new hut is built, and in it are placed the club, cloth and utensils of the deceased. Offerings of ghee and cloth are brought and placed before the hut. Then all dance before it and utter cries resembling the howling of jackals, which of all sounds ever heard is the most hideous. After this violent exercise dinner is served to all on green leaves instead of plates. The next day the buffaloes are sacrificed. These are to furnish the dead Toda with nourishment in the happy buffalo heaven to which he aspires.

Mission effort among these people was begun only eight years ago, and as yet no Toda has been converted. Miss Ling, the devoted missionary who works among them, has translated Mark's gospel and some Christian songs into their tongue. As they have no written language she was obliged to use the Tamil character, the Tamil being the language largely used in South India. Some impression has been made on these people, as the two incidents following will show:

A woman who had been taught for some time lost her sight. She was taken by the missionary to the hos-

Digitized by Google

pital and was cured. The first Sunday after she left the hospital she came to the Christian Tamil service. When asked why she was there, as she could not understand the preaching, singing or praying, she answered: "I am thankful to God for giving me sight, and He understood all that was said and my heart, too." Her eyes had been opened to the God who is a spirit, or she would have bowed to her buffaloes and thanked them for her sight.

The second incident relates to a Toda boy who had been instructed in a Sunday-school. He had had a dream and told Miss Ling that it made him sad. He dreamed he saw tribes and tribes going into heaven. There were white people and brown and black, Brahmins, low-caste and Mohammedans, and many that he did not know, but not one Toda. Miss Ling answered by singing in his own language, "Jesus, I Will Follow." As she finished the boy said: "I will follow." He seemed really trying to do so. Let us hope that he may continue until he is a man and perhaps help to lead his own people into Christ's light.

To become *Christians* they must cease everything, almost, which distinguishes them as a people. Families must be broken up and Christian marriages instituted. Even their occupation would be a temptation to them.

In some parts of Ireland, where peculiar dialects linger, it is said that a form of the Lord's prayer is still used in which the expression "Deliver us from evil" is rendered "Deliver us from Druidical practice." So these poor Todas, bound hand and foot, as it were, to the uncouth creatures they worship, will some day pray

Digitized by Google

"Deliver us from buffalo-worship," for they, too, shall ultimately join the ransomed throng here on earth, and, delivered from the terrible custom of polyandry which has decimated their race, become strong dwellers in these blue mountains, praising our God amid this beautiful scenery, and perhaps going now and then to visit the old munds where their ancestors lived in the ancient days of buffalo-worship.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIV.

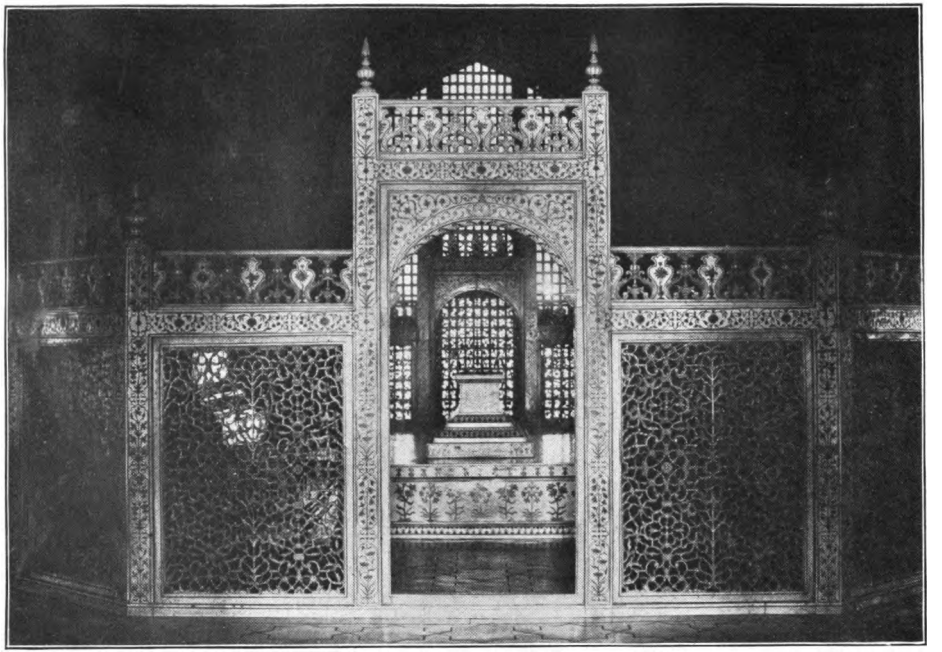
ORIENTAL PALACES AND TOMBS.

Delhi is called the Rome of Asia, because it is so full of beautiful buildings and interesting ruins. The old part, abounding in relics of bygone days, together with the new, covers an area of ten miles by six. It is really divided into seven Delhis. Inside the entire area there are seven castles and fifty-two gates. All these, besides tombs, pillars and old Buddhist remains, are extremely interesting.

Delhi was settled by the early Aryans, but the Hindu monarchy was probably removed before the Christian era. Of all the reigns before that era that of Asoka is probably the only one of which we have really authentic history. During his reign the Buddhist faith was proclaimed the state religion and from his *laths,* or pillars, at Delhi and Allahabad, we learn many of the civil and religious laws which he proclaimed. These are known as "Asoka's Edicts" and are in the Pali language. He came to the throne about 263 B. C.

In the eighth century, A. D., Delhi became the metropolis of the Tamar Rajpoots. These were overthrown by the Pathans of Ghazni. Later, in 1193, the first of the slave-kings of Delhi ascended the throne. This king, Kuth-ud-din, having been a slave of Mohammed Ghori of Ghazni, had been made viceroy and ultimately became king. It is probably in his honor

Digitized by Google



THE EXQUISITE MARBLE FRETWORK SCREEN INSIDE THE TÄJ MAHAL, AGRA.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

that the Kutub Minar, the great tower called the pride of Delhi, was built, as its architecture is pronounced pure Pathan.

The Pathan kings reigned until 1556 when, after several dynasties of the Pathans, the Moghuls became firmly established. Baber was the first of the Mogul kings. He lies buried in Kabul, but the tomb of his son, Humayun, is outside of Delhi on the beautiful road to the Kutub. It is of red sandstone and a most beautiful and perfectly preserved building of the early Moghul days. A beautiful story is told of Baber and his son Humayun. The latter was dangerously ill and the king formed the loving resolve to give his life for his son's. He walked around the bed three times and said: "I have borne it away." The son improved and the father declined from that day. The great Akbär was Humayun's son. He removed the capital to Agra. He seems, on the whole, to have been a wise and able ruler, and, judging from his pictures, which you may see at Delhi, he was handsome and noble-looking. His son, Jehangir, was quite different from his father, being given to debauchery and cruelty as well as great intolerance in religion. His queen, Nur Mahall (Light of the Palace), afterwards called Nur Jahan (Light of the World), was very influential and she and her brothers managed the affairs of the kingdom with prudence and humanity. Nur Mahal's history is like that of a fairy-story. She was of a noble Persian family which had been reduced to poverty. Her father emigrated to India. On the way Nur Jahan was born. The parents were in such extremity that they put the infant on the

Digitized by Google

public road to excite compassion. A rich merchant took it for his own, hiring the mother as its nurse. Through this kindness the family were introduced at Akbär's court. Here Jehangir saw the young and beautiful girl and was captivated by her. His father ordered her marriage with a Persian, Sher Afkan. When Jehanzir became emperor he tried to induce Sher Afkan to divorce Nur Jahan. He refused and, in the quarrel that ensued, he as well as his viceroy were killed. For some time Nur Jahan would not listen to the emperor, looking upon him as her husband's murderer, but he finally prevailed and she became empress of India. Her influence was unbounded and she used it for good.

Shah Jehan was Jehangir's third son. His wife was Mumtaz Mahal, for whom the wonderful Taj at Agra was built. After her death he could not endure life at Agra and removed the capital back to Delhi, where it was before great Akbär's time, eighty years before.

The fortress and palace of new Delhi is said to have cost 50 lakhs of rupees, or more than a million and a half of dollars. In the great hall, *Diwani Am,* the kings held audience for all, arranged by rank. In this hall is a fine throne of white marble. On the left is the *Diwani Khass,* or special hall of audience. It is the finest building of its kind in India, and perhaps in the world. Its sides are open save for rows of massive columns on the four sides. The dimensions are 80x160 feet and there are thirty-two pillars, some large and some small. All have rich, fluted edges and Corinthian capitals. The relief work, and the capitals of all but

Digitized by Google

the outer row, are richly overlaid with heavy gold leaf. At one end, separating the principal part from the women's hall, there is an exquisite white marble fret-work screen. From a distance it looks like lace; even closely examined it is faultless. Above this screen is a representation of the scale of justice in relief-work, overlaid with gold. This entire hall of white marble, with its superb mosaics of birds and flowers done in precious stones, its frescoed ceiling of fine woods set into the marble, its fluted Moorish arches, is the most ornate, perfectly oriental spot imaginable. When the "Peacock Throne" stood in its midst it must have been the materialization of an Arabian Night's dream. Over the rich cornice of the ceiling is the exquisite motto, in large Persian letters of pure gold.

اگر فردوس بر روے زمین است

همین است و همین است و همین است

"If there be an eylsium on earth, it is this, it is this, it is this!"

The place is indeed so beautiful with its rich ornamentation and the exquisite vistas of palm and flowering shrub from between the magnificent pillars that even an Occidental is fain to confess it an Elysium and echo the motto, "It is this! it is this!"

The palace itself is a marvel of beauty and richness, nor it is less opulent in history and romance. Here, in 1716, Hamilton, the Scottish surveyor, cured Farrokh Siyar on the eve of the latter's marriage. The em-

Digitized by Google

peror left it to the doctor to name his reward. He asked on behalf of the deputation from the small British factory at Calcutta that it be allowed to establish a factory and to maintain thirty-seven towns on the Hoogley river. This was the foundation of "The Presidency of Fort William" and all that came therefrom.

In 1739 Mohammed Shah entered the throne-room with Nadir Shah of Persia and the two sipped coffee on the Peacock Throne. The next day the treacherous Persian had the citizens massacred and watched the slaughter from the terrace of a mosque in Chandni Chauk, one of the great streets of the city. He then carried away great booty, among it being the Peacock Throne, all being valued at £80,000,000 sterling. In 1803 Lake's cavalcade filed into the Diwani Am. In 1857 the last of the Moghuls consented to the butchery of helpless English women and children and he himself, the last of the line of Baber, afterward died an exile in a strange land. Chandni Chauk, or Silver Thoroughfare, has lost its splendor, but we saw many costly rugs, much silverware and carpets of fabulous value displayed for sale.

The Jamna Musjid is called the greatest mosque in the world. The minarets are one hundred and thirty feet high and the great courtyard is three hundred and ten feet square. The building was begun in 1644 and five thousand workmen were constantly employed for six years. It is a massive structure of red sandstone. The floor is of alternate white and black marble blocks, each large enough for a devout Mussulman to pray upon. There are no seats, as the Mussulman either

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE METHODIST THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY, BARIELLY.

Digitized by Google

stands or kneels on his praying mat. We were shown a piece of rock containing an impression of Mohammed's foot, an old slipper of the prophet's; also a Koran said to have been brought from Mecca thirteen hundred years ago. I chose to believe the Koran and slipper myths, but rejected the one about the rock.

As we drove out to the Kutub we saw, from a distance, the Kotila of Firoz Shah, with stone pillar. This pillar is an ancient Buddhist relic, said to have been brought down from the sub-Himalayan country, where the contemporaries of Antiochus and Ptolemy had one of their chief seats. This pillar has stood for ages upon a three-storied structure. It once had a globe and crescent at the top and was gilded. It is forty-two feet seven inches high. Its date is given as 1351 to 1388 B. C. The inscriptions are well-known edicts of Asoka (third century, B. C.), but they must have been inscribed later.

On this same road we saw the great fortification of Indrapat, or sixth Delhi. Inside this fort is a fine mosque of Pathan architecture. This magnificent fortification is now inhabited by 10,000 low castes. Farther on this historic road we saw Hunayun's tomb, built by his wife and finished by Akbär, his son. This beautiful structure is of the earliest Moghul period and was built a century before the Täj. Its dome is three-fourths the size of St. Paul's, London, and is of a different shape to that of the Täj; yet in the marble dome, side kiosques, majestic portals and storied openings and lofty plinth, it was clearly the forerunner of the Täj. It is built of red sandstone and white marble. From its

Digitized by Google

central hall Hodson took the sons of the ex-king in 1857 and executed them.

Still further on our drive we visited an ancient cemetery called the Nizamuddin, after a shah buried there. This king is said to have been a sorcerer and murderer of the secret order, Khorasen. The marble fretwork screen is beautiful and the veranda finely frescoed. Here, too, is the tomb of the poet Khusru, built, it is said, five hundred years ago. Khusru was the author of the "Bhag o'Bahar" (Garden of Beauty), a book much admired for its exquisite Hindustani and its voluptuous images. To those of us who were compelled to read it, as a drill in the language, it seemed so vile morally that it was like driving into a sea of filth to secure a pearl or two of language.

Near this tomb is an old mosque, from the roof of which, sixty-five feet high, three divers plunged into a tank of water below. It looked a fearful leap. A tomb not far from the mosque was that of Jahanara, a *Begum* and a famous beauty spoken of by European travelers. She was a good and noble woman, called the "Mogul Cordelia." She requested that no costly tomb be placed above her. She wished, she said, to rest under the meadow grass only. A small space is open in the marble above her grave, and here a little patch of grass is kept growing. All these long years the letter of her request, but not the sweet spirit, has been kept sacred. She wrote the following epitaph for her tomb:

"Let no canopy cover my grave. This grass is the best covering for the poor in spirit. The humble, the

Digitized by Google

transitory Jehanara, the disciple of the holy men of Christ, the daughter of the Emperor, Shah Jahan."

Her father was very tolerant of all religions and it is said he was almost persuaded to become a Christian. When the Romish priests urged him to confess by baptism his belief in Christ, he said: "I find myself bound to Mohammedanism by ties which I am unable to break asunder. The mullahs (priests) of the palace and the sultana, my mother, never cease to inveigh against the new religion which I protect. I meet with still greater opposition from the women of my harem, whose apprehension of being all discarded as soon as Christianity shall have reduced me to make choice of a single companion, leads them to spare no caresses that they may tear my heart from the religion of Jesus Christ."

Still farther on this famous road we saw the Janter-Manter, an old dial called the "Prince of Dials." It is a huge structure and was built in 1730 A. D. And now we reach the Kutub-Minar, the glory of Delhi as the Täj is of Ägra. The name means "The Polar Star." It is two hundred and thirty-eight feet six inches high, forty-seven feet three inches in diameter below, tapering to a diameter of nine inches at the top. It was begun in 300 A. D. and completed about 1375, having been erected in honor of Kuth-ud-din, the first slave-king. The tower is of red sandstone, built so as to show covered and fluted pillar-like projections all over the outside. For a distance from the bottom these outlines are rounded; in the second and third sections they are alternate pointed flutings. It is a superb structure.

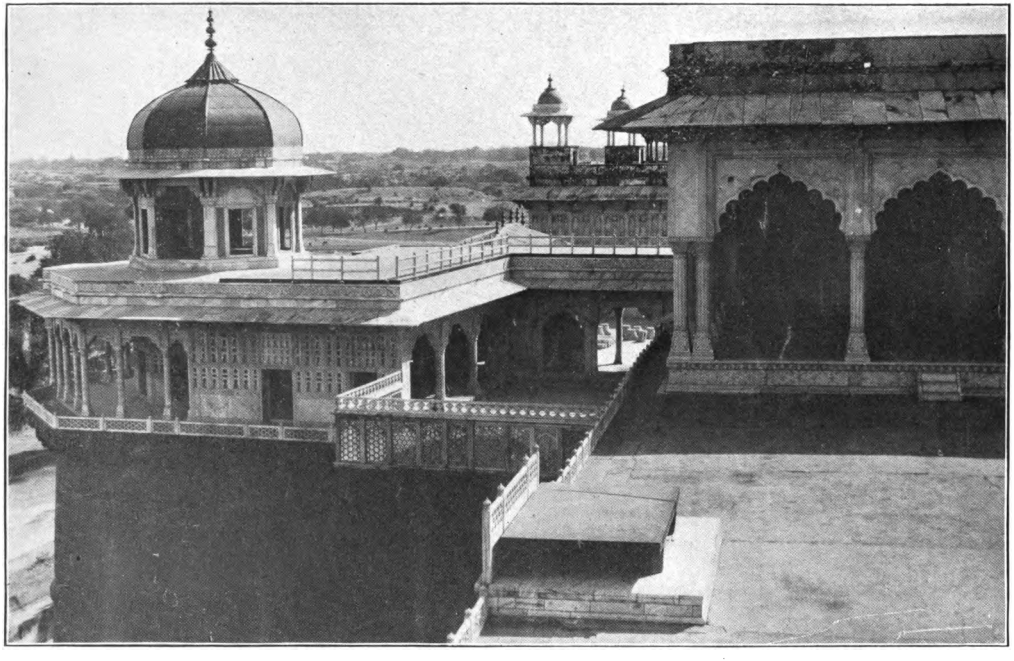
Digitized by Google

Near it is the "Iron Pillar of Asoka," said to mark the center of the earth. Under it there is said to be vast quantities of coin and numbers of idols. It is the oldest thing in Delhi.

Ägra, the other capital of the old Moguls, is very little to look at now, as a city. Its ancient glory has departed, except the beautiful buildings which have stood for several centuries and will remain for centuries still, unless forcibly destroyed. The fort is simply magnificent, and inside it is the beautiful palace of Akbär. This is built of pure marble, most elaborately and exquisitely adorned with mosaics of flowers and designs in carnelian, turquoise and other precious stones. The most perfectly beautiful spot is the Jessamine Tower, which was built for Mumtaz Mahal, the idolized wife of Shah Jahan, the "exalted," or "chosen" of the palace. Near it are beautiful terraces enclosed with marble screens of such delicate, lace-like workmanship as to seem indeed the fabric of a dream. This tower, enriched with its mosaics representing the jessamine flower and plant in most beautiful designs, overlooks the Jumna river, which here describes a curve, seeming to enclose the piece of land on which the Täj is built. So, across the water, the beautiful queen would watch the Täj rearing its snowy loveliness to her memory, and in this lovely Sumam Burj, with its golden dome, would dream away the soft moonlight nights, reclining on silken cushions. Truly everything is luxuriant and oriental in the extreme.

And the Täj! The peerless Täj! What shall we

Digitized by Google



THE JESSAMINE BOWER IN THE PALACE AT AGRA.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

say of its pure outlines, its perfect dome, its exquisite mosaic work in precious stones, its lace-like marble screens, its matchless symmetry!

> Thou didst gleam before our vision's eye,
> In dreams like fair mirage,
> And now before thy loveliness,
> Our lips are dumb, O! Täj.

It is indeed difficult to describe the Täj. Pictures can never do it justice, and, to crown all, it is in a garden so beautiful that the gem is enhanced by the setting. Above, in the palace, all is beauty, love and luxury; while in the resting-place of Shah Jahan and his adored wife, in this most beautiful tomb of the world, all speaks again of undying affection, peace and beauty.

But what of the dungeons underground? We had to insist on seeing them before the guide would escort us down. Then he opened the trap door and we descended. The heat seemed to grow more intense as we proceeded, while the flare of torches and their smoke reminded one of some of Dante's weird imaginings. Here, in the small underground rooms, the queens were imprisoned who incurred the king's displeasure. Here they were tortured or starved until it pleased him to set them free, or else taken to be hanged in the awful prison-room, directly under the Samam Burj, or Jessamine Tower. The beam above the pit is beautifully carved and, near by, is a little mosque wherein they uttered their last prayers. The pit opened out into the Jumna River, into which their bodies were

Digitized by Google

cast to be eaten by crocodiles. Here, too, is orientalism and false religion. The glamour is above, the awful dungeons below.

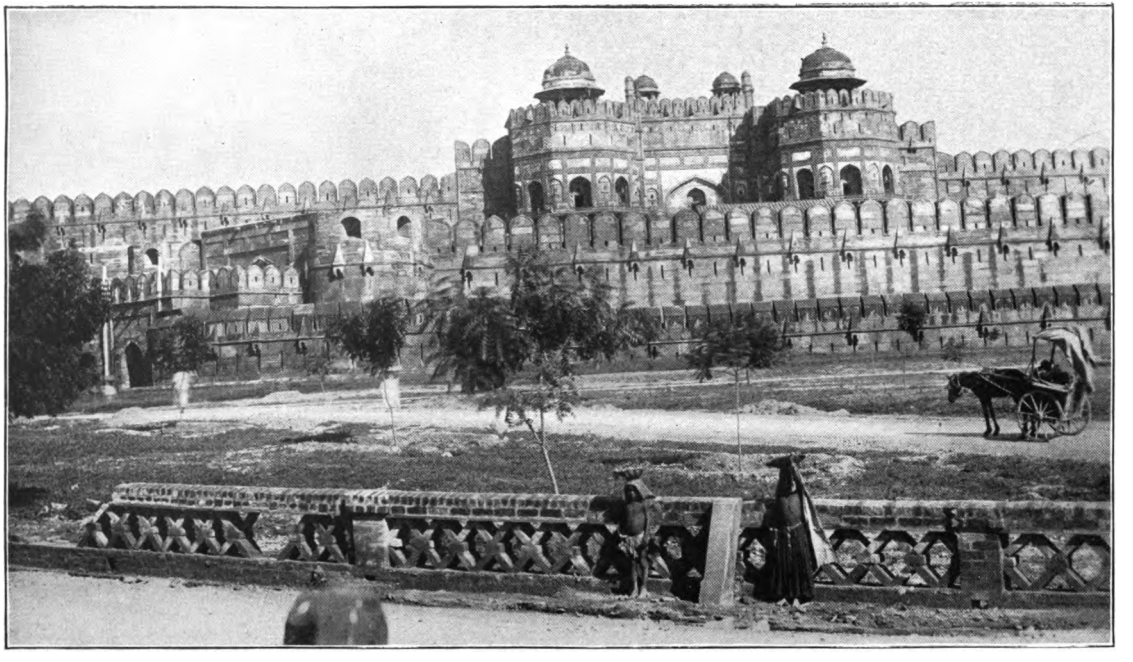
Lucknow, dating from 1775, was the capital of Oudh, which became a kingdom in 1814 under Ghazi-ud-din, the first king. It is chiefly of interest to tourists as being the scene of a siege in the awful days of the Mutiny of 1857. The old ruined residency, where Lawrence and his brave companions held out for those dreadful eighty-five days of siege, tells its own story of shot and shell, death and loss. As we walked through the underground room where three hundred women and children found shelter the whole awful scene came before our eyes. The little force intrenched, the thousands of rebels outside, the hourly death, the awful suspense until, on the 25th of September, Outram's forces came to the rescue. In Cawnpore there is a memorial erected over the well, wherein so many women and children, dead, dying and living, were thrown by the order of the murderous Nana Sahib, the leader of the mutineers.

In Lucknow we visited the grave of Sir Henry Lawrence, one of the noblest soldiers and Christians that ever lived. Tennyson has immortalized the siege in his fine poem by that name.

To-day the banner of England floats over Delhi's great fortifications and Ägra's equally impregnable fortress—impregnable to all but Anglo-Saxon bravery and daring. Here in Delhi and Ägra, symbols of Mogul magnifiecence; and in Lucknow, of ancient Oudh, we feel a thrill of pride for our race and join heartily

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



THE FORT AGRA—INSIDE THE FORTIFICATIONS ARE THE PALACE AND MOSQUE.

Digitized by Google

with our English brothers in giving honor to the great and brave generals and men who won back all these castles, forts, gardens and power for the English crown.

Banner of England! O! not for a season hast thou
Floated in conquering battle or flapt to the battle-cry.
Never with mightier glory, than when we had reared thee on high,
Flying at the top of the roofs in the ghastly siege of Lucknow.
Shot through the staff or the halyard, but ever we raised thee anew,
And ever upon the topmost roof our banner of England blew.
—*Tennyson.*

This part of India is expressive of the magnificence we always connect with the Orient. In many other places there are fine castles and beautiful buildings, but in contrast to these is the prevailing poverty of the millions of low-caste, the shut-in, ignorant condition of the women, and all the sluggishness of Eastern life. With all its marble palaces and grand towers we say with the laureate:

Better fifty years of Europe
Than a cycle of Cathay.

In Baroda there are fine palaces belonging to the Gaekwär, as the ruler is styled. These, however, are a mixture of oriental and occidental architecture and might easily be the residences of wealthy persons of Western lands, with proclivities for travel and Eastern magnificence.

The ceilings, frescoes, oil paintings, tapestry and wood carvings are very rich and mostly in excellent taste, while the porphyry and feldspar vases in the

Digitized by Google

entrance hall are truly splendid; but while the palace and grounds partake of so much Western culture and taste, yet the elephant-stables and the armories are entirely Eastern in prodigality and luxuriousness. The number of elephants is often ninety-nine, but never one hundred, as that is considered an unlucky number. At the time of our visit there were but nineteen, some of them noble creatures. There is a house near the stables containing the housings and trappings for these regal animals. The two howdahs meant for royalty are overlaid with gold, with gold-embroidered silk hangings bordered with rich fringes of gold. The other howdahs, for the Gaekwär's bodyguard, are similar, only done in silver. There are necklaces and anklets of pure gold for the huge animals. Another anklet was shown us, made of iron and ornamented (?) with sharp, needle-jointed spikes about a finger's length each, all pointing inward. These are used in catching the wild elephants. A tame decoy-elephant is sent into the jungle and, when the mahouts, or elephant-drivers, see the new elephants come up they shoot off firecrackers and guns to bewilder the poor animals. When there is a good deal of smoke, one of the most adroit manages to fasten one of these iron anklets around a leg of one of the wild creatures. This is fastened by a long, strong chain to a very large tree, and, after several days of fasting and struggle, the poor elephant gives up the battle and obeys its master.

In the other armory the trappings for the bullocks may be seen. These animals draw the ammunition-wagons and must present a fine appearance, in purple,

Digitized by Google

scarlet and gold. Even their horns are enclosed in hollow sheaths of gold. The climax of magnificence was supposed to be reached by the present Gaekwar's grandfather, who made two solid silver cannon, having iron bores. This man's son, however, outdid him by constructing two solid gold cannon to establish his name and fame.

In Mysore the palaces are somewhat like those in Baroda, partaking very largely of Western architecture and art. The summer home of the Rani is at Ooctacamund in the Nilgiri hills. It is quite modern in style and furnishings.

In Jeypore they are more oriental, but Delhi and Agra contain the only fair samples of oriental magnificence and regal splendor. Here we may dream the Arabian Nights' dream over again—here revel in esthetic beauty and be filled with gratitude that we live in a more utilitarian age and may enjoy this ancient beauty and romance at a safe distance from the dungeons and the squalor that accompany despotism on the left hand, while fragrance, luxury and pomp step gaily on his right.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XV.

ABOUT CASTE.

The common belief among the Hindus as to the origin of the four great divisions of caste may be very briefly stated. The Brahmins proceeded from the mouth of Brahma; the Kshatriyas, or Chhatris, as sometimes spelled, from his arms; the Vaishays from his thighs, and the Sudras, or Shudras, from his feet. The extract quoted in support of this view I find in a condensed compilation in regard to caste prepared by Sir. J. Murdock. It is found in the ninetieth hymn of the tenth book, called "Purusha Sukta," or "Hymn to Purusha":

1. Purusha has a thousand heads, a thousand eyes, a thousand feet.

6. When the gods performed a sacrifice, with Purusha as the oblation, the Spring was its butter, the Summer its fuel and the Autumn its offering. This victim, Purusha, born in the beginning, they immolated on the sacrificial grass; with him the gods, the Sadhyas and the Rishis sacrificed.

11. When (the gods) Purusha, into how many parts did they cut him? What was his mouth? What arms (had he)? What (two objects) are said (to have been) his thighs and feet?

12. The Brahmin was the mouth; the Rajanya was made his arms; the being (called) the Vaishya, he was his thighs; the Sudra sprang from his feet.

13. The moon sprang from his soul, the sun from his eye, Indra and Agni from his mouth, and Vayu

Digitized by Google

from his breath. From his navel arose the air, from his head the sky, from his feet the earth, from his ear the four greatest.
In this manner (the gods) formed the worlds.

This hymn is, however, considered one of the latest of the Vedic hymns and (probably) belongs to the Brahmana period; hence it may have been written to suit existing orders or classes. Manu also gives a similar account of the origin of caste. In the "Mahabharata," one of the most voluminous of the Hindu books, a different account is given. Here it is stated that the world, being created by Brahma, the people were all Brahmins, but became separated by occupation and by high or low moral character into the four great castes. In another part of the same book the creation of caste is ascribed to Krishna. In still another "Purana" the "Krita age" is described as having only one caste. All this contradiction and confusion gave rise to one of the truest remarks in the "Mahabharata," which is: "Contradictory are the Vedas; contradictory are the Shastras; contradictory all the doctrines of the holy sages." Yet with all the inconsistency and even absurdity of these various accounts, Hindus believe firmly in the divine institution of caste.

Although scholars have proved without doubt that the European races and the Aryans have all come from the same place and at one time lived together as brothers, yet the Hindu still regards the European as an unclean *Mlechcha*. Outward honor is given all over India to the *sahib log* as the ruling race, but inwardly they throw contempt upon us. They despise

Digitized by Google

our meat-eating habits; yet from their own Sanskrit texts Sir Monier Williams proves the Aryans to have been a meat-eating, even beef-eating, people. In the Vishnu Purana we find, says Monier Williams, that the eating of meat was once universal in India.

The true origin of caste, according to Dr. Muir and Max Müller, was when the Aryans (now Hindus) first came from their Central Asian home, down through the Hindu Kush, into Kabul, and thence into India. Here they found the aborigines, who were darker in color than the Aryans and had less prominent and beautiful noses. These tribes were the enemies, the *dasyus,* of the Aryans; and, as so many dasyus became enslaved, the term *dasa* was applied to a servant. These dasyus are spoken of in the Aryan books as "eaters of raw flesh," as "black skins," etc., and even referred to as demons. The subdued aboriginal tribes became the Sudras, the three twice-born classes belonging by blood to the Aryans. These three classes were distinguished by their occupations—worshiping the gods, fighting enemies and cultivating the soil. Those who memorized the hymns essential at sacrifice or at other ceremonies and at the beginning of battles managed to impress the people with the belief that the slightest mistake in pronouncing the words of these hymns would rouse the anger of the gods. Thus they succeeded in monopolizing the religious ceremonies and forming a class by themselves, whose favor was courted and whose anger was dreaded by a credulous race.

Digitized by Google

However, in many places in the Vedas we find kings acting as priests at sacrifices. One king is quoted by Murdock (Vivas mitra) who, though a Kshatriya, yet contributed hymns to the Rig-Veda, which shows how little importance was attached to caste at that time. In later times the Brahmins, in order to uphold their system, maintained that this king was admitted into a Brahminic family.

Manu, too, the great lawgiver, whose strictures in regard to caste, and the treatment of widows and the position of women, are cruelty and bigotry embodied, was himself of the Kshatriya, or warrior-class, by birth.

Some Aryans, it is claimed, would not submit to the laws laid down more and more stringently for the governing and classifying of the three estates of the twice-born, and these were known simply as tribes (vratyas).

Those of the aborigines who conformed to the Brahminic law were constituted a fourth, or foot-caste (the sudras), while the other aborigines still continued to be called dasyus.

The struggle, according to eminent writers on Vedic law, was long and bitter between the two highest castes. In the time of Manu, however, the Brahmins were far superior to the warrior class, before whom, a few centuries earlier, they used to fawn and cringe. Suffice it to say that they have held their position to the present day, and, while many cruel laws and regulations have been abolished under English

Digitized by Google

power, yet the Brahmin rules and sways India in a most tyrannical manner through the blighting caste system. Manu says the mixed castes, the almost endless subdivisions and resubdivisions, came into existence through marriages between the four original castes. But Max Müller thinks they originated in occupations and professions, trades, etc. It is this system which now holds sway in society. One of the possible good effects of such a system, Monier Williams points out, is the feasibility of governing such a people, since, being so widely separated by caste barriers, political fusion and therefore combined opposition are rendered very difficult.

Many other reasons for the subdivision of caste are given, as jealousy between rival families, clan-government, causing clans belonging to the same caste, and sectarian differences as to new gods, new rites and new dogmas. Many able writers have devoted years of study to this subject, and our only aim has been to give in brief some of the conclusions arrived at by such writers as Dr. John Muir; Dr. Wilson, of Bombay, who published two large volumes on this subject; Mr. Sherring, of Benares, who gave very detailed information as to caste and its workings in three quarto volumes, and Sir J. Murdock, who has compiled quotations from the sacred books of the Hindus and from eminent writers on this theme. To comprehend something of the complexity of this subject and the almost endless ramifications into which it leads, the following condensed table, which I have prepared

Digitized by Google

from the Census Report of 1898 for the Central Provinces alone, may be of some assistance:

CASTES IN THE CENTRAL PROVINCES.

DOMINENT OR MILITARY.

MAIN CLASS.	SUB-DIV.
1. Girasia	
2. Giyar	5 Sub-divisions
3. Gat	
4. Kondarazula	
5. Maratha	
6. Rajput	25 Sub-divisions
7. Sikh	

CULTIVATORS.

1. Agamudayan	
2. Agharia	
3. Alia	
4. Are	1 Sub-division
5. Agawar	
6. Balya	
7. Banka	
8. Bare	
9. Bargah	
10. Bishnoc	
11. Bhoyar	2 Sub-divisions
12. Burman and Shan tribes.....	
13. Chasa	
14. Cherwa	
15. Dangi	3 Sud-divisions
16. Deswalii	1 Sub-division
17. Dora	
18. Ghogia	
19. Gurdi	
20. Kachhi	4 Sub-divisions
21. Kalanga	
22. Kalaryi	
23. Kamaria	
24. Kamma	

Digitized by Google

25. Kapewar	1 Sub-division
26. Kapri	
27. Kawar	4 Sub-divisions
28. Kaonra	
29. Khandait	
30. Kir	
31. Kirar	1 Sub-division
32. Kisan	
33. Kuda	
34. Kahli	
35. Kolta	
36. Knubi or Kurni	10 Sub-divisions
37. Lodha	
38. Lodhi	8 Sub-divisions
39. Londhari	
40. Machnaik	
41. Mali	4 Sub-divisions
42. Mana	
43. Marar	5 Sub-divisions
44. Marori	
45. Mowar	
46. Murai	
47. Paik	
48. Panara	
49. Reddi	
50. Sipti	
51. Sudh	
52. Sunkar	
53. Uria	
54. Velama	
55. Vellalar	

	Main Castes.	Sub-div.
Graziers, etc	15	11
Farm laborers	25	11
Forest and Hill tribes	34	44
Priests—Brahmins and Dhami	2	28
Devotees	29	11
Temple servants	4	
Genealogists	2	
Writers	7	3
Astrologers and quacks	6	
Musicians and reciters	8	

Digitized by Google

Dancers and singers	7	
Actors and mimics	4	
Traders	13	16
Pedlars	4	
Carriers	1	12
Goldsmiths	4	7
Barbers	6	
Blacksmiths	3	5
Carpenters and masons	15	7
Brass and copper smiths	10	
Tailors	3	
Grain parchers and confectioners	3	
Perfumers, drug sellers and betel leaf sellers	7	3
Weavers, dyers, etc.	27	5
Washermen	1	
Cotton cleaners	3	
Shepherds and wool weavers	3	8
Oil pressers	1	14
Potters	1	
Glass and bangle workers	3	
Salt workers	1	
Gold washers	1	
Iron smelters	4	
Fishermen, boatmen, cooks, water bearers, etc.	18	
Distillers and toddy drawers	7	11
Butchers	3	
Leather workers	9	
Village watchmen	15	
Earth workers and stone dressers	12	
Scavengers	5	1
Knife grinders	1	
Mat-makers, workers in cane, grass cutters	19	1
Hunters, fowlers, etc.	6	
Miscellaneous and disreputable livers	11	
Tumblers and acrobats	13	
Jugglers, snake charmers and animal exhibitors	7	

Is it any wonder, in this bewildering maze, to find a lady from South India calmly declaring that "down that way," as she expressed it, the Sudras were higher than the Brahmins?

Digitized by Google

According to good authority, the main divisions of the four great castes are as follows:

Brahmin (Priestly caste) .....
Dubai, Pau, Gaur, Jhujatia, Sanoria, Kanauzia, Kaththia, Choba.

Kshatriya or Chhatri (Warrior caste)..
Rajput, Jat, Ghuhär, Thakur, Sikh, Lodhi, Raj Gond, Gujar and Kyast.

Vaishyas (Tradesmen & Artisans).
Bania, Parwar, Aggarwal, Ninu, Kirar, Sumar, Khattri, Baguam, Kutwar, Chivar, Mahra.

Sudra or Shudra (Laboring & Servant caste & lower craftsmen) .....
Kusta, Kurmi, Dhobi, Bharga, Lohar, Kumbhar, Ahir, Qual, Gadarya, Kangar, Sansiya, Gidhya, Nat, Bazigar, Chumar, Balahi, Kuch-bandia, Mang, Dher, Basor, Bhangi.

Some authorities put the last four outside the pale of caste altogether. In many parts of India the names would be quite different, just as in different parts of India the rules governing the same castes are very unlike.

Sir Monier Williams remarks that the lower castes are not unhappy, and, strange to say, none are greater sticklers for their caste observances. I am myself inclined far more to the opinion expressed by Raja Sir

Digitized by Google

T. Madhava Row, K. C. S. I., and quoted in Sir John Murdock's pamphlet:

> The longer one lives, observes and thinks, the more deeply does he feel that there is no community on the face of the earth which suffers less from political evils nor more from self-inflicted or self-accepted or self-created, and, therefore, avoidable evils, than the Hindu community

The second expression especially suits the condition in India—namely, self-accepted. They are born into these conditions and are taught the precepts and rules of their caste from infancy. Scarcely a famine waif, picked up and sheltered during the two famines of 1897 and 1900, even though the age was no more than four years, and though emaciated to a skeleton, but could on inquiry tell its jät (caste).

On all sides you see the observance of minute caste rules. A child strikes its foot against a stone and immediately makes an obeisance and salaam to the stone to propitiate the spirit possessing it. A man proceeds to go down a well, but not until he performs *puja* (worship) to the rope so that it may not break and precipitate him below. You offer some bread or food to a hungry child; he refuses, but implores you to give him money, as he can buy raw grain and prepare it himself, so it will not be contaminated by your touch. Your cordial hand-shake is refused by the zenana women for fear it may entail an extra bath of purification before they can prepare the next meal. Many castes dare not even receive a picture card from your hands. You must first lay it down, and then the other is free to lift it up and enjoy it. And so it goes through all the minutiæ of the daily duties.

Digitized by Google

At one time there was a severe struggle between the Brahmins on one side and the Buddhists and Jains on the other, the two latter being opposed to caste. When the Brahmins triumphed they made many laws stricter than before. Marriages permitted by Manu were forbidden, making it impossible for pure castes to intermarry with mixed castes, and the different subdivisions of the same castes were kept aloof from each other as if they were distinct castes. Mr. Sherring, of Benares, enumerates nearly two thousand subdivisions of Brahmins. They are engaged in all sorts of employments, from the haughty priests of Benares to the potato-growers of Orissa, who are described by Sir William Hunter as half-naked peasants with a filthy little Brahminical thread over their shoulders.

There are many defenders of caste in India. Very often some of the most energetic are educated men of the Hindu community. Some may and do deride the system; yet, as has been said, such a one may become a veritable Demosthenes in eloquence, only to sink into quiet submission to all the requirements of a superstitious family in private.

The advantages claimed for it are cleanliness, protection, division of labor, respect for authority and moral restraint. "Cleanliness" does not necessarily accompany ceremonial purity, as witness the use of cow's urine and dung as purifying agencies. "Protection" in sickness or distress, so far as it comes from caste-fellows, is a very unimportant consideration as observed in India. The *Panchayat* is very quick to

Digitized by Google

punish caste infringements, but exceedingly slow to extend the helping hand. A man may be sentenced to give an expensive dinner to his fellow-caste men (compulsory hospitality) for drinking from a low-caste man's cup or taking food from a European; but that same man may die in extreme want, with never a hand to aid him from among his own people. Should a Good Samaritan of a Christian doctor care for and feed him, he will be excommunicated for accepting this help. Should he recover he will be compelled to give a dinner to recover his caste. So great is the fear of ostracism that he may apply to the very Christian who helped him to give him the means of giving the dinner which is to purify him from the pollution caused by receiving food and care from his "unclean" benefactor. "Division of labor" is accomplished in other countries without the tyranny of such a system. "Respect for authority" in this case is degraded cringing to a power felt to be supreme, yet proceeding from one class of men—the Brahmins. "Moral restraint" means really "caste restraint," for things sinful in the sight of a holy God may be allowed and trivial things condemned as heinous caste crimes. During the Mutiny of 1857 Nana Sahib, at Cawnpore, sent cruel men to murder helpless English women and children and acted in the most shameful and treacherous manner toward those he had promised to protect. All this did not pollute him, but had he spared a little English girl and taken from her hands a drink of pure water he would at once have been expelled from caste.

Digitized by Google

Over against the supposed good results of caste we have, from the writers on Indian reform, both native gentlemen and great English authorities, the following evil effects attributed to caste: Physical degeneracy, owing to the narrowing circles wherein marriage is permitted, and also the laws enjoining infant-marriage. Intellectual ambition smothered. If all Hindu literature is considered part of religion, and the Brahmins alone estimated fit to read and teach it, intellectual stagnation must follow, not only in other castes, but to an alarming extent among the Brahmins themselves. When knowledge is insured in perpetuity to one class, it is no longer their interest to increase it, but rather to grow indolent and subsist by cheating and deluding the masses.

Thousands of Hindus would gladly help to institute social reforms, but caste ostracism has its terrors for even such enlightened men. Sir Monier Williams, in his book on "Brahminism and Hinduism," gives a striking account showing how caste is the foe of social reforms. He says:

> When I was in Gujerat, in 1875, a man named Lalla-Bhai, a cloth merchant of Ahmedabad, was proved to have committed a heinous caste-crime. He had married a widow of his own caste, and to marry a widow is, in the eyes of a Hindu, a most awful offense. A woman once married belongs to one husband for time and eternity. Forthwith he was sentenced to complete excommunication. No one, either of his own, or any other caste, was to be allowed to associate with him; no one was to have any trade dealings with him; no one was to marry any of his children; no temple was to receive him as a worshiper; and if he died, no one was to carry his body to the burning-ground. On the morning after the sentence was passed he went to the Bazaar as usual,

Digitized by Google

but not a person would buy from him or sell to him; he could get no home to live in and none of his debtors would pay him their debts. It was impossible to sue them, as no one would give evidence. He was a ruined man, and had to leave the country, and obtain government employment in a distant city.

Nationality cannot exist in such a conflicting state of society. Sir J. Murdock describes caste conflicts in South India, where the hold of caste is said to be the strongest. These often occur elsewhere, and, when stopping short of contests, smouldering hatred and contempt are cherished. Hinduism and caste are inseparable; therefore all the evil results of class hatred, indifference to suffering and many other evils are fostered and consecrated by religion. Someone has said: "The spirit of caste will never die." We see something of it in other countries; but outside of India all reformers can appeal to religion as opposed to such enmity among brothers of the same human family. Here all the forces and precepts of religion are on the side of antagonism and oppression. Dreadful stories of neglect can be gathered from all parts of India. Travelers are left to die for want of water, because the jät or caste of the man is not known, and on the roads leading to sacred shrines many whitening bones testify to the cruelty of a system which so completely ignores the brotherhood of man.

Some maintain that the lower castes are not unhappy; some likewise deny that the *women* of India are unhappy. We see much to contradict both assertions in the caste conflicts before mentioned—the assumption of caste in South India by Dravidian, Turanian or Scythian peoples; the efforts of even many

Digitized by Google

Christian converts to retain rank of former caste, if high, and to claim as high a former caste as possible. "Manufactured Brahmins" in the north are cited by Hunter, and in South India Dr. Burnell says he knows families claiming to be Brahmins, and called so, who from inscriptions can be proved to have been Jains five hundred years ago. All these things prove that sorest discontent and even rebellion are rife. But even if content, their very content proves their degradation. How can men be content to be considered unclean and vile and in some castes ranked beneath even the brutes?

The Brahmin arrogates to himself even godlike powers. Witness the verse translated from the Sanskrit:

> The whole world is under the power of the gods;
> The gods are under the power of the *mantras;*
> The mantras are under the power of the Brahmin;
> The Brahmin is therefore our God.

With such ideas, how can justice prevail between man and man? All these evils are common throughout India, but probably the worst abuse comes to pass in the "Kulinism" of Bengal. A king named Ballala Sen, a reputed son of the Brahmaputra River, gave the title of *Kul,* or honorable, to certain Brahmins. Brahmins of a lower order are most anxious to get a Kulin son-in-law. Hence large sums are paid them to marry their daughters. There are Kulins with twenty, fifty, or even a hundred wives. But the marriage of Kulin females is cruelly stringent. These must not on any account be given to any unless they are of an equal or superior grade. The poor Kulin father is often in the

Digitized by Google

greatest difficulty. He cannot allow his daughter to marry anyone of a lower grade; he cannot afford to purchase a husband in his own. It would be a great disgrace to allow her to remain unmarried. His only resource is to appeal to some decrepit old Kulin Brahmin, who has already a multitude of wives, to save the honor of the girl and her family by adding one more wife to his lot. Kulin polygamy carries with it a license to indulge, to an almost unlimited extent, the vilest passions of human nature, carrying in its train untold misery, suffering and crime. It is, indeed, "hallowing wrong by the authority and sanction of religion."

It is pointed out in Sir J. Murdock's pamphlet on caste that even the British Government seems to sanction and abet caste distinctions by reporting in its census tables all the different divisions and subdivisions, which could safely be ignored; also by entering caste distinctions in other public documents and making inquiries in court about caste. Should government ignore this question, especially in giving posts of employment to applicants, and consider qualifications only, a great disintegrating factor would be introduced into the system.

To close with a few of the laws of many regarding caste will probably be the best commentary on this powerful system, which rules India with a rod of iron. These quotations, as well as the most of the material used in this chapter, are taken from Sir J. Murdock's compilation regarding caste. The works of Manu, said to have originally consisted of one thousand chapters

Digitized by Google

and one hundred thousand *slokas,* or proverbs, have been reduced to twelve thousand; these to four thousand, and then to two thousand, six hundred and eighty-five. A few quotations are given:

BRAHMINS.—THEIR CLAIMS.

92. Man is declared purer above the navel; therefore the purest (part) of him is said, by the Self-Existent, to be his mouth.

93. Since he sprang from the most excellent part, since he was the firstborn, and since he holds the Vedas, the Brahmin is, by right, the lord of all this creation.

94. His, the Self-Existent, after having performed penance, created in the beginning from his own mouth, for presentation of oblations to the gods and offerings to the manes (and) for the preservation of all this (world).

95. What being is there superior to him, by whose mouth the gods eat oblations and the manes offerings?

98. The birth of a Brahmin is a perpetual incarnation of *dharma,* for he exists for the sake of *dharma,* and is for the existence of the Vedas. (Dharma means religion or sanctity.)

99. When the Brahmin is born he is born above the world, the chief of all creatures, to guard the treasures of *dharma.*

100. Thus, whatever exists in the universe is all the property of the Brahmin; for the Brahmin is entitled to all by his superiority and eminence of birth.

101. The Brahmin eats his alone; wears his own and gives away his own; through the benevolence of the Brahmin, indeed, the other people enjoy (all they have). (Book I.)

PUNISHMENTS OF BRAHMINS.

379. Shaving the head is ordained as (equivalent of) capital punishment in the case of a Brahmin, but in the case of other castes, capital punishment may be (inflicted).

380. Certainly (the king) should not slay a Brahmin even if he be occupied in crime of every sort, but he should put him out of the realms in possession of all his property and uninjured (in body).

Digitized by Google

381. No greater wrong is found on earth than killing a Brahmin; therefore the king should not even mentally consider his death. (Book VIII.)

The atonement for killing a Sudra is the same as for killing the following animals:

132. On killing a cat, an ichneumon, a daw, or a frog, a dog, a lizard, an owl, or a crow, he should practice the observance (ordained for) killing a Sudra. (Book XI.)

SUDRAS.—CREATED FOR SERVITUDE.

91. One duty the Lord assigned to a Sudra—service to those (before mentioned) classes, without grudging. (Book XI.)

413. But a Sudra, whether bought or not bought, the Brahmin may compel to practice servitude; for that Sudra was created by the Self-Existent merely for the service of the Brahmin.

414. Even if freed by his master, the Sudra is not released from servitude; for this (servitude) is innate in him. Who then can take it from him?

410. The king should make the Sudra (act) as the slave of those who are twice-born. (Book VIII.)

123. Merely to serve the Brahmins is declared to be most excellent occupation of a Sudra; for if he does anything other than this, it profits him nothing.

129. Indeed, an accumulation of wealth should not be made by a Sudra even (if he is) able (to do so), for a Sudra getting possession of wealth merely ignores the Brahmin. (Book X.)

417. A Brahmin may take possession of the goods of a Sudra with perfect peace of mind, for, since nothing at all belongs to this Sudra, as his own, he is one whose property may be taken away by his master. (Book VIII.)

REWARD OF SERVITUDE.

125. The leavings of food should be given him and the old clothes; so, too, the blighted part of the grain; so, too, the old furniture.

PUNISHMENT OF SUDRAS.

270. If a man of low birth assault one of the twice-born castes with violent words, he ought to have his tongue cut out, for he is of the lowest origin.

Digitized by Google

271. If he make mention in an insulting manner of their name and caste, a red-hot iron rod, ten fingers long, should be thrust in his mouth.

272. If this man, through insolence, gives instruction to the priests in regard to their duty, the king should cause hot oil to be poured into his mouth and ear.

279. If a man of the lowest birth should with any member ignore one of the highest station, even that member of this man shall be cut off. This is an ordinance of Manu.

280. If he lift up his hand or his staff (against him) he ought to have his head cut off; and if he smites him with his foot in anger, he ought to have his foot cut off.

281. If a low-born man endeavor to sit down by the side of a high-born man, he should be banished after being branded on the hip, or the king may cause his backside to be cut off.

282. If through insolence he spit upon him, the king should cause his two lips to be cut off.

283. If he seize him by the locks, let the king without hesitation cause both of his hands to be cut off. (Book VIII.)

TREATMENT OF CERTAIN CASTES.

57. The dwelling of Chandalas and Swapacas should be outside the village; they should be deprived of dishes; their property consists of dogs and asses.

52. Their clothes should be the garments of the dead and their food should be in broken dishes; their ornaments should be of iron and they must constantly wander about.

53. A man who practices the rules of right should not desire intercourse with these people; their business transactions must be among each other and their marriages should be only with their equals.

54. Their food (for which they are) dependent on others, should be given in a broken dish; they should not wander by night among the villages and towns. (Book X.)

SUDRAS NOT TO RECEIVE RELIGIOUS INSTRUCTION.

80. One may not give advice to a Sudra, nor (give him) the remains (of food) or (of) butter that has been

Digitized by Google

offered. And one may not teach him the law nor enjoin upon him religious observances.

81. For he who tells him the law and he who enjoins upon him (religious) observances, he indeed, together with that Sudra, sinks into the darkness of that hell Asamvratta (unbounded). (Book IV.)

These are the laws approved by the Hindu religion in the wonderful land of the Mahatmas and holy men (?) of which Theosophists boast. Should all Christian rule vanish from the land of India the penalties of the laws regarding Sudras would all be visited upon Theosophists themselves, who can never by profession or practice become anything but filthy *Mlechhas,* fit only to be spat upon by the lordly Brahmins they profess to imitate.

I knew an old lady in Poona who distinctly remembers the time when a low-caste was not allowed inside that intolerant and bigoted city before the hour of nine in the morning and after four in the evening. During these hours the shadows are long, and it would be difficult to prevent the unclean shadow of a Sudra from falling upon a holy twice-born. I have myself repeatedly been passed by Brahmins in Poona early in the morning, when they would fairly hug the wall toward the east to avoid my shadow falling upon them.

How strangely a certain passage from the "Mahabarata" sounds after all this:

Small souls inquire, "Belongs this man"
To our own race, or class, or clan?
But larger hearted men embrace
As brothers all the human race.

Digitized by Google

Then, indeed, must India be populated with only "small souls," for any recognition of men as brothers outside the class or clan is a foreign doctrine.

At a large meeting in Calcutta fifty years ago the same sentiment by Burns was hailed with enthusiasm:

> For a' that and a' that
> It's comin' yet for a' that
> That man to man the world o'er,
> Shall brothers be for a' that.

And yet in fifty years what has been done inside of Hinduism to cure this evil? It will require something mightier than social reforms, mightier than human agency, to overcome and cast down this awful power of caste. Dr. Duff's words, quoted in Murdock's pamphlet, contain the key to the only solution:

> What, then, can exorcise this demon-spirit of caste? Nothing! Nothing but the mighty power of the Spirit of God, quickening, renewing and sanctifying the whole Hindu world! It is grace, not argument; regeneration of nature, not any improved policy of government — in a word, the GOSPEL, the everlasting Gospel, and that alone, savingly brought home by the energy of Jehovah's Spirit, that can effectually root out and destroy the gigantic evil! And it is the same energy, inworking through the same Gospel of grace and salvation, that can and will root out and destroy the other monster-evil under which India still groans —Idolatry and its grim satellite, superstition!

As caste and idolatry sprang up together from the same rank soil of old nature, both are destined to fall together. Then will the stupendous fabric of caste and idolatry be seen falling down like Dagou before the ark of the living God!

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XVI.

PECULIARITIES AND INCONSISTENCIES OF CASTE.

When we speak of the "system" of caste a Western man conceives the idea of regular rules, divisions and customs. Upon the contrary, while its reign is an iron reign and millions bow to its tyranny, yet in itself it is one of the most contradictory and inconsistent systems imaginable. A missionary once told us that he wrote, while in college, an essay on "Caste in India," which was considered by all, himself included, as a very fair and comprehensive treatment of the subject. Now, after ten years' residence in India, working among all classes of people and hearing constantly of the bewildering rules and requirements of caste, he feels incompetent to give a settled opinion on this question, involving the accumulated ideas of centuries.

I have heard Brahmins flatly deny as their customs things which I have myself seen other Brahmins do, and we find in various parts of India similarly conflicting conditions and demands. Many of these differences come from the fact that not a few high castes here and there in India are manufactured ones—as, for instance, Rajputs, through prowess at arms, or through wealth, support their claim to be Brahmins. In South India many grand Telugu and Tamil families succeed in being classed and recognized as Brahmins, though not even belonging to the Aryan race, being

Digitized by Google

Dravidians of entirely different stock. Some scholars even claim, as does the German writer Peschel, that they are not even the Dravidians from which Adam sprung. In the Central Provinces the Raj Gonds are now recognized in government census returns as belonging to the Kshatris, or second grand division, though they are really of the aboriginal hill tribes. All these people, while classed as Brahmins or Kshatris, will naturally keep to most of their original customs, so that what a Brahmin will allow or prohibit in one part of the country is no sure index of what will be permitted or denied to a man of the same grade in another. Other conditions, such as isolation, etc., tend to foster differences. If Mr. Sherring's estimate is correct that there are two thousand subdivisions of Brahmins, then there must perforce be two thousand points of difference at least, with possibly several thousand more.

In the Berars we were asked by a gentleman why it was that while Ahirs, Kurmis or Kumbis and Kumhars (all belonging to the Sudras) abhor the flesh of swine and will not even *touch* it, yet some Rajputs, belonging to the second grand division, will *eat* it. This question horrified us, and we thought the statement must be entirely incorrect. However, on inquiring, we find it is true of *some* Rajputs; not only some of them, but also of some subcastes of Brahmins, who limit themselves to the wild hog. From a story to be told later we can believe this evil without the word of a North India Brahmin, who informed me that this custom of swine-eating obtains among some subdivisions.

Digitized by Google

There are new and curious things all about us, and because we often are not acquainted with them we may contradict those who discover more concerning them. Most people, after living in India for years, would deny the statement that Mohammedans do scavenger work. Yet among the seven subdivisions of Bhangis, or sweepers, we find that two—the Shaik Mehtars and the Rawats—are Mohammedans. In Khandwa, at a conference several years ago, I saw a Mohammedan woman, as I judged by her dress and appearance, doing sweeper's work. On inquiring the missionary told me that was a common sight in that part of the country. In Lucknow there are five hundred Mohammedan sweepers.

When we speak of the hapless lot of the low-caste and the out-caste in India, how they are oppressed and trampled upon by the higher classes, and all the sad conditions of their lot, would it not seem incredible to Western ears if we should continue our remarks by saying that the poor woman sweeping about the house and carrying away offal would yet refuse an invitation to sit down at your table and eat a comfortable meal on the ground that her caste forbade it? Now confuse your listener still more by saying that she could with impunity carry away scraps left on the plates and gnaw bones already picked, and to his mind you will have reached the climax of absurdity!

And then the strange ideas prevailing in England and America in regard to cleanliness in India! Many missionaries and travelers confirm these mistaken no-

Digitized by Google

tions by speaking of the scrupulously clean zenanas. The bare interiors impress many people with the idea of cleanliness, but a closer inspection generally discovers the sanitary condition to be frightful. In most families the children are not even taught the habits considered essential in animal pets in our homes. There are exceptions to this rule, and in some few houses real cleanliness obtains and not merely ceremonial purity. But the prevalence of plague, the drastic cleansing measures adopted by government, the epidemics of typhoid, smallpox and other infectious diseases are sufficient testimony to the unclean conditions of streets, houses, wells and rivers. Just watch the bathers in a small river or tank, from which each one emerges purified (?), and you will be convinced. The whole body is being cleansed, coughings, spittings are going on—but I refrain—while the man three feet below is taking a morning drink of running, therefore pure (!), water! To hear of a man undergoing purification sounds clean, as does purifying (?) a well. But when we learn that the latter is plastered with cow manure to cleanse it, we gasp; and when we find the purification of the man consists in swallowing a pill composed of three products of the cow—milk, butter and the excretions—we feel that we cannot solve the question of Hindu purity. A high-caste man, rolling out his *chapatties* (bread cakes) will stop to blow his nose; having no handkerchief, he rubs his hand on his loin-cloth and proceeds with the rolling. The dexterous fingers in the zenana, making the delectable pän, will pause to pick something from the toes and

Digitized by Google

proceed with the pän without even a ceremonial washing. The sweetmeat man, in weighing out his goods, will spill them all over his bare feet and gather them up and add them to those on the scales without even an apology. As for the cloth covering the sweeties, it represents considerable wealth of butter and sugar accumulations. As to the habits of servants, every missionary can tell his tale of woe. Some of our friends at home would starve, I fear, if they tried to hold on to the ideas of cleanliness they have always cherished, or else do no mission work in order to look after their own health. This is one of the minor crosses in this land, though at times comedy leaves the stage and tragedy takes its place.

Mr. and Mrs. Kullman, no doubt, lost their lives the same day because of the unclean condition of a cooking vessel, while two other missionaries near Madras died from a similar cause. There are no doubt many such cases near us. Here in the Central Provinces three English officials died before morning after a dinner. The dishwater in which the plates were washed after each course was found to be deadly poison by reason of germs.

In the land where some castes are enjoined to bathe five, six and even thirty times a day we are in constant peril of losing our lives through uncleanliness. How many of us have sighed for a drink of *clean* water, not boiled, from a *clean* well, removed from drains, from a *clean* bucket in which hands have not been washed surreptitiously, from a *clean* cup which has been already wiped on a *clean* towel (not pre-

Digitized by Google

viously used for toilet purposes), and cleansed previously in *clean* water, in which lurk no germs of disease! Alas! for bathings oft and the purifications and ceremonies of caste! As the baseless fabric of a vision they fly away.

Kindness to animals! Perhaps in no one thing is the utter contradiction of precept and practice more apparent than in the reverence given to animals and the treatment they receive. Because the cow, the sacred bull, the peafowl, elephant, monkey and snake are worshiped in India, therefore it is concluded that here is the animals' paradise, and the poor dumb creatures of Western lands are commiserated on their hapless lot.

Jains are often seen going about the country wearing a thin cloth tied over nose and mouth so that they may not destroy animal life. These men will not wade a river for fear of crushing small creatures beneath their feet. Poor people, unable to feed Brahmins or beggars (I was going to say *other* beggars, for so many Brahmins fatten on free gifts from the poor), will go along the road with handfuls of crumbs feeding the ants under the trees or throwing the crumbs to the birds. This all sounds very pitiful and kind, yet in no other country is the lot of the brute creation such a hard one. Readers of English and American journals are often admonished of their duty to the dumb creatures about them because even heathen people are merciful to their animals. We are told again and again of that wonderful hospital for animals in Bombay. The only really pleasant thing about it,

Digitized by Google

the gateway, is photographed and reproduced in papers and magazines, until we fairly long to escort some of these enthusiastic Hinduites into the interior. Could they pay but one visit there we should never see its gateway portrayed in the magazines again. The maimed and miserable creatures within, without medicine or treatment, and, for the most part, underfed, make one's heart ache for pity. The cage of yelping, thin, mangy bazaar dogs, whose speedy death would be a mercy to themselves and a benefit to human beings who may be endangered if they escape, the wretched arrangements and revolting sights, are sufficient to convince anyone that only mawkish sentiment prompts the building and maintaining of such a hospital. At one time a roomful of bedbugs were cared for, poor men being hired by the night for eight cents to sleep there in order that the creatures might feast upon the miserable humanity." Outside the hospital are crowds of uncared for beggars, while within is this mockery of care for animals. The worship of the cow and sacred bull, though it may allow certain sleek animals, which have been blessed by the priests, to roam the grain bazaars and eat their fill from the stores of the poor grain-sellers, does not by any means insure good treatment to animals even of the bovine character. Such emaciated, scarred, ill-fed, ill-treated cattle you will never see anywhere else. As for hobbled horses, ponies and cows, space forbids the story. The little donkeys are nearly all lame from excessive burdens and scant food, while hundreds are beaten constantly on already sore and bleeding backs. The bazaars are

Digitized by Google

full of starving cats, dogs and goats, and many cruel things are done for gain or out of laziness which I think are unknown in Western lands. Once, when going up the ghat road to a hill station, we were unwise enough to take a cheap pony-carriage. The ponies nearly succumbed. Beatings were of no avail. We were growing weary of the brutality of the driver and also very anxious to get on, as we had no wish to spend the night on the road, for tigers were not entire strangers there. "Oh, we'll soon make them go," the driver said, as we neared some huts. One of the men ran into one of these huts and returned with something in his hand. We supposed that he had a little grain for the poor, jaded beasts. When he went to the ponies' heads something aroused our suspicions, and my husband jumped out in time to see the man trying to rub red pepper into the eyes of the exhausted creatures. Our merciful intervention was the cause of our camping under a tree in the rain for a couple of hours until more ponies could be secured.

The absurdity of worshiping the sacred bull and its small indication of gentleness to animals, even of the same kind, may be illustrated by a little scene I witnessed at a Hindu festival. A beautiful, sleek, well-fed young bullock was mounted on a cart and being drawn around the fair to receive the salutations of the people and their offerings of grain, grass, sugar and salt. The handsome young animal looked happy and well cared for. But what of the poor bullock drawing the cart? Thin, hungry, goaded on by sticks in which nails were fastened, causing its poor sides to

Digitized by Google

bleed afresh with each thrust! And this in a land where animals are worshiped!

A lady in an American paper suggested that, as the Hindus loved animals so much and held their life so sacred, it would be easy to organize bands of mercy and help among them. Mercy and help—ah! How both are needed in a land where children are purposely crippled in order to beg more successfully for lazy parents and guardians! In South India even such a horrible practice is known as fastening beetles on children's eyes to eat them out. Can there be mercy and help among high castes where baby-widows are treated worse than criminals would deserve? But at any rate, some will say, the taking of life is avoided. What life? Caste forbids the killing of a cow or a chicken; therefore an only son in a Brahmin family is left to die sooner than give him the beef or chicken broth which the doctor, himself a Hindu, said would in all probability save his life. At the same time this family's caste does not forbid the eating of fish. Save the life of a broken-legged horse, but ride another with bleeding back an unmerciful distance! There is no soundness in the Hindu creed of the sacredness of life. It is an illogical, blind following of caste rules which ameliorates the condition of neither animal nor man.

Among the people who observe the purdah or gosha system we find, amid all its hardships and privations, many seeming and real breaches of its letter and spirit. In many very high families the old mother or grandmother will sometimes appear and talk before

Digitized by Google

men, but the younger women are supposed never to be seen by other than relatives. What was our surprise, then, while calling upon a family of rank, to have a young and beautifully adorned bride brought in and shown to my husband! And that, too, in presence of her own husband and another male relative!

In many houses where we teach, should the husband appear, the wife will fly from our presence, leaving us to face him alone, thus demonstrating her own superiority over the foreign ladies. Even the oil-man or water-carrier must give notice of his approach, so that the women may hide behind pillars or doors. Yet in these same families, if a man comes on business, one of the women will often talk to him from behind a door or pillar, and in a lull of the conversation, pretending to think he is gone, she will look out, showing her face entirely; then, with a little scream, disappear again. From a young European woman who has worked for years in the zenanas I learn that much flirtation and even real sin is possible behind the purdah. There is, after all, only one effectual purdah, and it is the gospel one: "Blessed are the pure in heart."

There are some strange practices connected with the naming of children. We all know how the Brahmins despise the Bhangis, or Mehtars, and to tell one of them that he acts like a Mehtar is the grossest insult. Yet these proud people will give these very names to their children in the hope that the children may thus be rendered displeasing to the gods, and that, in consequence, the gods will not desire to take them. Similar to this is the Western superstition, that

Digitized by Google

if you love your child too much God will take it from you. In a Brahmin family which I know five children died in succession, each soon after its birth. When a sixth came, and that a fine-looking boy, they quickly gave it the name Bhangi (pronounced Bungi). After two years more a little girl was born, and they called her Mehtrani. Both names mean scavenger. As these two children lived, it would be difficult to dislodge the superstition which has fastened such opprobrious epithets on their children. Another family who would dislike very much to be considered Christians, nevertheless named a child, born during the famine, when the family were receiving help from the mission, Isa Charan—"At the feet of Jesus."

Some of the most inconsistent features of caste relate to food. In certain Banyia castes a man may not eat food prepared in any home but his own, or by anyone outside his own family, with one notable exception. He may eat it, prepared away from home and by others than relatives, provided it is prepared in ghee. Now, the reason for this is that, as feasts in connection with marriages are necessary parts of the ceremonies, and as those attending the weddings must be able to eat there, the enactment that food prepared with ghee may be eaten away from home assures the expensiveness of the food.

These same Banyias may not sell honey or beeswax, as they are products manipulated by the mouth of the bee. Other less particular castes may sell these contaminated articles. You may cause great loss to a sweetmeat seller by touching the sweets on his plate

Digitized by Google

or tray, as you thereby spoil the whole stock. We did this once, and, after tasting, decided not to buy, as the wares were not fresh. "Give it to your dog, then. I cannot sell it. You have touched it," the man said. Yet these men make some of their finest goods with sugar which they know has been clarified with bone-dust, while another large part is made from *gurh*, or unrefined cane-sugar, which one would think would be sufficient to condemn it for high-castes. This *gurh* is prepared by many castes, principally by Kachi, Kurmi and Laria Chumär castes, which are all composed of Sudras. In no other particular can they come near the lofty Brahmin, who would throw away any food that a Sudra had touched.

Now for a few hog stories, which show, perhaps, the ridiculous side of caste rules and exceptions more vividly than anything else. A hunter brought to the bungalow five beautiful little white pigs. I was tempted to buy them, being tired of goat meat, when the servants prepared to flee the compound in a body—high, low, Hindu and Mohammedan, from the cook to the water-carrier. I did not buy them; yet these same servants will cook English salt pork, sausages, etc., and carry it in parcels from the railway station, knowing exactly what they are doing. An amusing thing occurred in South India in a mission-compound. A wild-looking hog rushed on the premises from the direction of the jungle. The servants declared it to be a wild hog, and the missionary shot it. Two Brahmins heard of the shooting and came in haste to get some bristles to wear as charms. They tied some around

Digitized by Google

their necks, feeling well secured thereby against evil spirits. Alas! for their joy! The next day it was proved beyond question that the hog was a domestic animal owned by a Basor. It was being driven with others, and breaking away fled to the jungle. Marks on the animal identified it and confusion reigned. The two Brahmins were distracted over their errors. The *Panchaiyat* held its session on the spot, only far enough away to escape defilement, and the two unfortunate men were sentenced to give an expensive khana to their caste people on penalty of being excluded from caste if they refused.

Here is a still more astonishing story: On the sacred Narbudda River, at a place called Burman, you may see lordly Brahmins crawling prostrate under a stone image of a hog. If you are good, yet stout, the hog will raise itself to let you through; but if you are thin and bad, he will squeeze you down until you will be glad to draw back.

In the Vedas the *Viraha,* or boar-incarnation, is fully described. The story, by the way, is the Hindu version of the deluge; from whence derived, who can tell? A demon cast the earth into the sea and destroyed its population. Vishnu assumed the form of a huge boar, and with his powerful tusks raised the earth from the waters. This incarnation is usually spoken of as the *Barha* incarnation.

Just at the close of the *Dawali,* this year, a huge bazaar was held in front of the house of a man, Bhika by name. He was born a Basor, but became a sweeper by marriage and occupation. This man hires musicians

Digitized by Google

to attract the crowds and the market-people bring their goods there to sell. At this time he has a great sacrifice also. A booth is erected near his house, and in it an image of mud is made. This is called a *murlee*, and a mock marriage is often celebrated between this image and men attending the fair. At night a great sacrifice is made. A hog is slaughtered and offered to the idol. I could not find out the meaning of all this ceremony, even from the people themselves. They know very little of the inner meaning of such rites, and what they do know they hesitate to tell us. But what I wish to emphasize is the fact that in the evening all classes, from Brahmins down, come into this low quarter of the town, in front of a sweeper's house, and worship before an image which he has paid for and set up. All classes of Brahmins come, not only the Chattisgarhi Brahmins, as a Christian claiming descent from Brahmins suggested, but North India Brahmins and proud Marathas, even to a first-class magistrate.

How unfounded seems the hatred to beef and beef-eaters, as the Hindus call Europeans, when in their own books (the Vishnu Puranas) Monier Williams finds the fact stated that meat-eating was once universal in India, and the cow was sacrificed at certain festivals, when the aroma of the beef was considered as an excellent aliment for the spirits of the dead. Manu also, the great law-giver, sanctions the eating of all animal food, only stipulating that portions be offered to the gods and to spirits of ancestors. How absurd seems a sentence passed on a king of Travancore, who

Digitized by Google

was troubled on account of the lives he had destroyed in battle, that these sins would all be forgiven him if he should pass through the body of a cow! Fully as absurd was the manner in which he fulfilled the condition. A huge golden cow was made, and, after lying in its interior for three days, the king crawled forth absolved.

During famine times caste-rules undergo great strains. Some *Panchaiyats* passed special dispensations allowing caste people to eat at government poor-houses without losing caste, and many other subterfuges were resorted to. In most cases the people were true to caste and many doubtless died sooner than break its regulations.

In Gadawara, a few years ago, a man lost his wife and child in a burning house because he was not near enough to give them permission to leave it. They resisted all efforts made to remove them until it was too late. From a foolish notion of reverencing the master of the house they doubly bereaved him. Time fails to recount many other peculiar and contradictory things pertaining to caste—such as the workmen on the Darjeeling railway receiving caste sanction for meat-eating while on that difficult work. The strangest feature of it all is that the people themselves seem utterly blind to these absurdities. They bow unquestioningly to the dictates of this system and never inquire: Is it right? Is it consistent? or, Is it true? They simply bow. Well may we say, with Erasmus, of it and them, "So hard pressed are they by the

Digitized by Google

heavy yoke of man that they cannot take upon them the easy yoke of Christ."

But its sway shall not be forever. Here and there souls are awakening to a sense of caste-bondage and, realizing that "life is more than meat, and the body than raiment," are searching for the true rule of life which teaches that "not that which enters into a man defileth him, but that which proceedeth from the heart." A Hindu reformer cuttingly says, "Our religion seems to have its root in our stomachs," but by and by the new and purer doctrine will be believed throughout India, and instead of innumerable pharisaic injunctions as to food, cup and platter, the motto for Hindustan, as for the world, shall be: "Blessed are the pure in heart."

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XVII.

EDUCATION IN INDIA.

Americans usually think of the people of India in a bulk, and call them "natives," making no distinction among them as to education, refinement or wealth. The word "native" suggests people like the wild tribes of Africa; hence many, through ignorance, put the people of India on a par with those tribes. Just why a man of India should be called a "native" rather than that a man born in Germany or France should be called a "native" when in his own country, may not be easy of explanation. Think of the shock to a Londoner in Regent Park if he were referred to as a *native.* Some one's head would be in danger.

An Indian lady recently perpetrated a good joke. She was intelligent, educated, refined and quite comely. She was lecturing in England on behalf of the Anti-Opium cause, and everywhere heard her own people spoken of as "natives" of India. An English lady said to her one day:

"Why do you return to India? You are good-looking, intelligent and attractive. You could marry an Englishman and live here."

"Oh, I wouldn't like to marry a *native,*" was her sarcastic reply, meaning a native of England, of course.

There are some wild people in India—a few, not

Digitized by Google

many. They keep to the jungles and mountains and live on fruits and game. But they are not representative of the people in general. On the other extreme there are Indian gentlemen who are members of the Viceroy's council, judges in the High Courts, barristers, physicians, college professors, editors of periodicals, bankers, managers of large industries, besides the long list of men employed in minor government and railway offices. These also represent but a very small percentage of the people. Between these and the jungle tribes are the masses of the people—tradesmen, shopkeepers, farmers, laborers, teachers and the like. The educated ones indicate what the Hindu mind is capable of, but the masses are yet very ignorant.

The census of 1891 shows that out of every thousand males one hundred and nine could read and write, and of one thousand females only six could read and write; or about 11 per cent of the males and six-tenths of one per cent of the females were literate. This shows a wide field for improvement along educational lines.

The thought of general education for India is of very recent date. Before the British gained control there were a few schools among the Mohammedans and a few among the Hindus. These were for the most part engaged in teaching religion. The Hindus did not believe in general education. Learning was limited to the Brahmin caste. Warriors, tradesmen, farmers and laborers were not permitted to learn to read and write. It was thought that the sacred books

Digitized by Google

were too sacred to place before them. The Brahmin, having a monopoly of learning and having no rival to spur him on, was content with but little progress. He spent the most of his time in idle dreaming. His religion was the result of his dreams. His science, what little he had, was the product of his imagination, based on no empirical knowledge of nature itself. He did not study phenomena to find out the "how" and the "why" of things. That was too much like drudgery and unsuited to his tastes. But, instead, he sought his gods—gods of his own making—and endeavored to obtain from them revelations that would explain the universe. He mistook his imaginings for revelations and the results are vagaries that we find in the Puranas, and that used to be called science, but now are laughed at by the Brahmin himself. That the earth is flat, bounded by seven circular seas of milk, whey, butter, water, etc.; that it rests on the backs of four elephants, which stand on a turtle, that in turn rests upon a snake, is not science, but a dyspeptic dream that will not bear the morning light.

About a century ago there began to be some talk among the English officials on the practicability of educating a certain number of Brahmin youths for the subordinate positions in the government service. Several meetings were held and a great deal of discussion, pro and con, took place. Warren Hastings was a warm advocate of the project. Some opposed, fearing to take the "native" into government offices. Others thought him incapable of such service. But various schools were attempted, with varying degrees of success.

Digitized by Google

About that time William Carey, a Baptist missionary, appeared on the scene. To him more than to any other man is due the credit of founding education in India. Before his time some Lutheran missionaries had done something in the way of reducing a few vernaculars to writing and establishing schools. But Carey mastered the Sanscrit and a few of the vernaculars. His great thought was to get a literature. He established a printing-press, cast his own type in the vernaculars and began printing the Bible in the language of the common people. Marshman and Ward joined with Carey. After some years they had printed the Bible in twenty-six languages of India. Along with the Bible they printed school text-books, that the people might learn to read. Soon schools were established, especially by various missions, as these text-books made schools possible.

The introduction of these text-books into the vernaculars was the real beginning of general education in India. In the beginning there was great opposition to promiscuous education. The Brahmins foresaw their loss of prestige if the common people had access to books, and they strenuously opposed this innovation. Even within the past twenty years, when an Indian gentleman translated the Rig Veda into Bengali, there was great commotion among the Brahmins on account of the degradation of the sacred book by putting it into the hands of the common people.

The people of India are very conservative and reverence ancient customs. They are slow to take hold of anything new. They say, "My father and my grandfather could not read. I can't read. We have

Digitized by Google

prospered fairly well. Why should I have my son taught?" They had a sort of suspicion too that, as printing and books were introduced by the English, especially missionaries, they must be in some way connected with Christianity; that their sons in learning to read might be led away from the ancient faith.

It was not until within the past twenty-five years that the Indian youth manifested much desire for education. The most potent factor in producing this desire was the opening of a large number of government and railway offices to qualified Indian men. The Hindu, like other men, believes in a thing when he sees money in it, and when he saw good salaries and respectable employment offered him, his ambition began to awaken. But an education was required to fit him for these positions, and he began to call for schools.

The missionaries have done much in educating the Indian youth. Not only Carey and Marshman and Ward, but almost all missionaries, have turned their attention to this line. They have reduced nearly all the vernaculars to written languages; they have translated the Bible, school text-books and other useful books; they have provided schools for their converts and also for non-Christians, and urged the youth to attend and develop their minds for useful service. To-day a very large share of the schools and colleges of India are supported and managed by missionary organizations. They are doing a grand work also in industrial institutions and in orphanages. They have established training-schools for the teaching of trades, as weaving, cabinet-making, woodcarving, shoemaking,

Digitized by Google

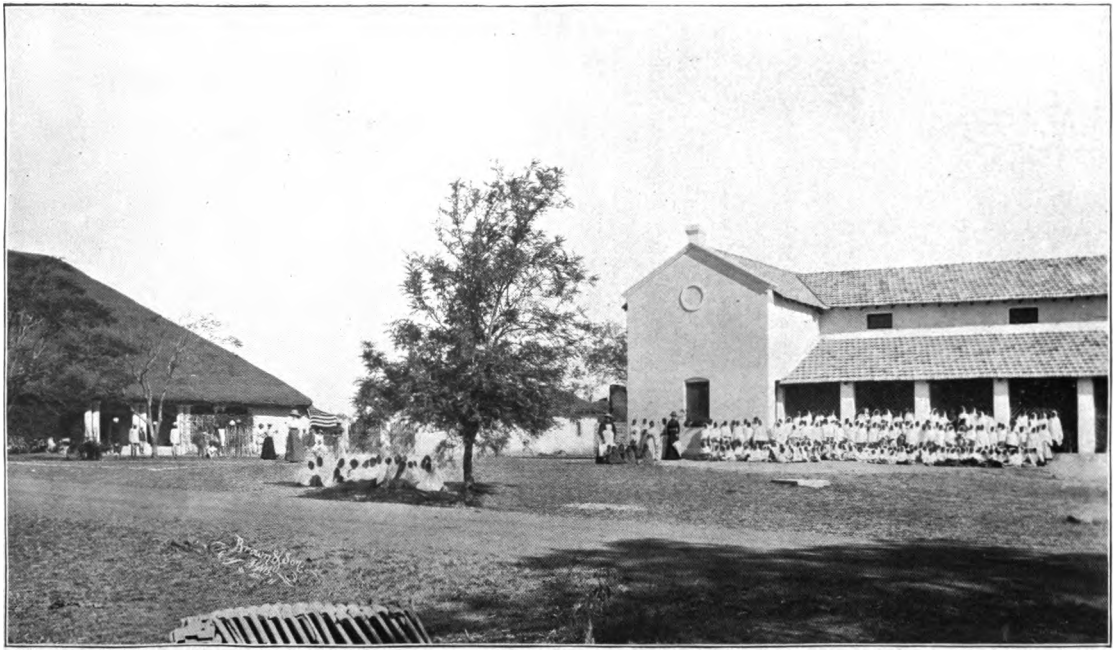
lacemaking and like trades. The Reid Christian College of Lucknow is doing a grand work in teaching stenography and typewriting, and thus opening up a large field of usefulness.

Government is developing a thorough system of education in all the provinces and presidencies. It has five universities located at Bombay, Calcutta, Madras, Allahabad and Lahore. These five universities alone have power to grant degrees, as A. B., A. M., etc. Each has annual examinations in several centers within its own territory and within easy access to all the population. Pupils from the various schools are sent to the nearest examining center for examination for entrance to the university, or for A. B., A. M., M. D., LL.B., and other degrees. There are several commendable points in this system. Everyone in any part of India has about the same grade of examination for the degree he receives as every other one in any other province. This same plan applies to European as well as to Indian pupils.

It may be thought difficult for a student to pass the whole of his course at one examination. There are some mitigating elements, however. For example, the candidate for A. B. may take an examination at the end of his second year of college and receive his F. A. (First Arts); then, at the final examination, he has but two years' work upon which to pass. Then, also, the percentage of marks that will pass him is only about thirty, while in an American college it is seventy-five to ninety per cent.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



CHRISTIAN GIRLS' SCHOOL, JUBBULPORE.

Digitized by Google

Government has primary schools in most of the towns and large villages. These are partly under the control of government and partly controlled by local committees of leading citizens of the community in which the school is located. The support of these schools comes from three sources—government funds, local funds and fees from pupils. The local committee decides how much each pupil shall pay, according to the ability of his parents or guardians. But these fees are very low, in some cases not over two cents a month.

There is, also, in many places, a sort of compulsory system. The local committee decides what pupils shall be compelled to attend school, or whose parents or guardians are so situated that they do not need the labor of their boys to support the family. Others may go if they choose.

In many places similar schools are provided for girls also. But these are not so general. Government offers special inducements to girls' schools, but as yet few Indian men think it necessary to have their girls taught. Many are so benighted still as to think that if women learn to read and write it unfits them for the house duties. It may unfit them to be the slaves of their husbands, but it does not unfit them to be companions and intelligent mothers.

Besides the primary schools, government has, in large centers, middle-schools, high-schools and here and there a college. Light fees are charged in these institutions also, as well as in the primary schools.

In each province and presidency there is an in-

Digitized by Google

spector-general of education, sometimes called by another name, but having the same functions. He has general charge of the educational interests of his province. There is a deputy inspector for each district or county. The deputy inspectors travel about their districts, examine the schools at least once a year, and report to their superior officers. They have the immediate oversight of the teachers, and report any delinquencies. Besides these there are usually circle inspectors, who grade between the inspector-general and the deputy inspector. Each of these circle inspectors has a group of districts under his charge. He has the oversight of the deputy inspectors and travels about inspecting the schools in his circle, and reports to the inspector-general. The inspector-general provides a curriculum for the schools of his province.

As previously intimated, there are many private and mission schools. These may be independent, if they like, but usually the managers place them under government inspection and receive from government an annual "grant-in-aid." The managers employ the teachers, furnish the building and apparatus and are responsible for the institution. They follow the government course of study and the deputy inspector examines the school at least once a year, promotes to the next grade the pupils that pass, and recommends to the inspector-general the amount of grant-in-aid to be given, which is based on the daily attendance and the number of passes. The grant-in-aid is never a very considerable sum, but is a great encouragement to pri-

Digitized by Google

vate institutions. These schools may teach whatever else they wish, but the government course must be pursued if they receive the grant-in-aid.

Most missions have orphanages in various places. These orphanages have become much more numerous in the recent famines. Many thousands of orphans are being educated, and, along with their school-work, they are usually taught some useful trade. Government also has industrial, technical and professional schools. Schools of medicine, law, engineering, forestry and surveying are established in various parts of India.

As yet only a very small percentage of the youth avails itself of the higher education. The primary schools are being urged upon the people. Most parents are now proud of their boys that can read and write, though few appreciate the value of such knowledge.

A serious problem presents itself in regard to college graduates. The college is a new institution. Graduates are a new class. As before mentioned, the primary object of the government officers in establishing schools for Indian youth was to prepare a certain number for government service. Now the supply is greater than the demand. A very few lines of employment are as yet open for these college graduates. Government service, railway service, teaching, clerkships with business firms, law and medicine are about the only objects of a graduate's ambition, unless he is a Christian and looks to the ministry. The legal profession is greatly overrun. As to medicine, its practice is not very general in India. The vast majority

Digitized by Google

of the Indian people do not employ doctors. If they are ill, they either endure it without medicine or use some domestic remedy. But government dispensaries that are now distributed over the country are acquainting the people to some extent with English medicines and English surgery, and they are beginning to prize them much more and the calls for physicians educated in English therapeutics and surgery are increasing, but the masses of the people are too poor to employ a physician.

On account of this poverty the legal profession has little money in it. Many cases are carried through for a fee of three dollars that in America would net one hundred. Even these cases are so scarce that the average lawyer employs an agent to go among the people and "drum up" cases.

When a government clerkship is open there are a dozen applicants who have been waiting some years as *ummedwar* (hopefuls) for such an opening. The same is true in regard to railway positions and other employments.

Few Indian college-graduates have a thought of developing a business for themselves. In America an A. B. may go into business on his own account. He may establish a dry-goods store, hardware store, a newspaper, a mining plant, a dairy, an agency or what not. But the Indian retains the idea that these forms of employment are degrading, meant only for the lower castes. He is willing to work hard in a government office, but not in an employment that looks like menial labor, hence there are many A. B.'s idle. But this evil will adjust itself in time. Many more forms

Digitized by Google

of industry that require educated men will be created in India as the years go by. Railways, telegraphs, electrical appliances, engineering, English stores and the like have, in recent years, greatly multiplied the opportunities for the employment of brains in India. Many others of the modern improvements now common in the Occident are being introduced into the Orient every year. These will furnish new lines of employment.

In the course of time, too, these graduates will open up business for themselves. Occupations that are now considered below their dignity will be taken up and pursued intelligently and raised to respectability. Thus, in time, there will be employment for all that may fit themselves by higher education to do something in this life.

It is different with the Christian graduates. Besides their share in the government offices and in the professions, they are greatly in demand as teachers in the various mission-schools. Consequently, the educated Christian of good character is seldom out of employment. They are also, as a rule, more trustworthy than non-Christians and are preferred in the offices.

The higher education is in English. If a man wishes an A. B. he must know English, as his examinations for that degree are in English. The reasons for this are apparent. There is almost no literature in the vernaculars. What there is consists largely of translations of recent years which are foreign to the language itself. The original productions that do exist are usually of a low grade as literature, and the moral tone is low. For example, in Urdu, the "Bagh

Digitized by Google

O Bahar" is considered the finest production. Yet it is mostly twaddle. The plan of the story shows little or no genius. Its inspiration is derived from the coarsest passions. Gluttony is very prominent. Parts of it are so immoral that even the Munshis, when teaching the English people the language, ask them to omit a number of pages. Such literature is not fit to be placed before the student.

Again, the vernaculars are not rich enough in vocabulary and forms of thought to be used in higher education. A language is a growth; that growth is in proportion to the intellectual growth of the people using it. A pastoral people will develop a language rich in terms pertaining to the flocks and fields and tents; but they may have no words to express thoughts pertaining to the city. They may have no words to express the idea of a paved street, telephone, electric light, elevator, mayor, high-school, and the like, because these pastoral people have no such things and have never made words to express them. On the same principle these same vernaculars of India have no words to properly express evolution, chemical affinity, dynamics, telegraphy, corpuscles, perception and similar thoughts so common in modern science. But the English language is very fertile in words and phrases that will clearly represent all our thoughts on modern science and philosophy. Rather, therefore, than build up all the vernaculars to the standard of modern thought, it is much better to use the already prepared English language in all forms of higher education. The primary schools are in the vernacu-

Digitized by Google

lars of the people, but above the middle grade government has wisely decided to use English.

English is destined to become the language of the common people of India as well as of the educated. The people are anxious to learn it. As the rulers of the land are English, the people think that they are of more importance themselves when they can use the English language, and this is true. An Indian, as a rule, is more honored by his own people when he is able to speak English. He stands a better chance for employment, not only in government service, but in the service of Indian merchants and business men. The knowledge of English also opens to the Indian youth all the treasures of knowledge of the earth. Science, philosophy, art, poetry, inspiration are his. His mind necessarily expands and becomes better fitted for responsible service.

For the English language to become universal in India will not be very difficult. The Indian acquires a new language readily. Often a common cook may be found who speaks fluently four or five languages, English included. The desire to learn English is greatly increasing. Let the vernaculars pass away. They have little in them that need be preserved. The Sanscrit is already a dead language. It may be preserved as such, just as classic Greek or Hebrew is with us. One language for all India would be a great blessing.

The people of India are very distinct one from another. They will never become one nation until they have a common language. The common government (English) does a great deal even now to

Digitized by Google

make their interests one. Yet they remain as separate peoples. In the United States of America there are colonies of Russians, of Germans, of Bohemians, who retain the languages of their mother-countries. These never become Americanized as long as they retain their native languages. They do not come into perfect sympathy with the government or people of the United States in general, until they use the language of the United States as their daily language.

When the people of India use one tongue in all parts of the land, and have one government, their interests will be one and they will become one nation.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XVIII.

GODS AND RELIGIONS OF THE LAND.

The gods and goddesses in the Hindu Pantheon are almost innumerable. There are said to be thirty-three crores, or three hundred and thirty millions of greater and lesser deities. In fact, the religion of the Hindus has degenerated into a huge system of demonology. The woods, the fields, the trees and rivers are all inhabited by beneficent or malevolent spirits. Even animals are possessed by spiritual beings, good or bad.

This great host of gods would seem to give wide range of choice to worshipers, but choice, like caste, occupation and many other things in India, has been decided by a man's forefathers, centuries before he came into the world. If his ancestors were Saivites, or worshipers of Siva, he will be so likewise, else be accused of the deadly sin of changing his religion. The same is true of followers of Vishnu. Yet, in a way, Brahminism is broad—that is, it absorbs into itself many beliefs and practices, and a man may be a good Hindu and even believe in the Christ of the Bible, provided he does not contradict or denounce anything in Hinduism. He must believe *all* to be true, and above everything else, with his belief, he must keep caste.

Digitized by Google

While most of the numerous gods are worshiped in all parts of India, yet some have a decided pre-eminence in certain portions. The two superior gods are undoubtedly Siva and Vishnu. The great Hindu triad represented in a number of cave temples, notably in the colossal sculpture in the Elephanta* Caves, near Bombay, represents Brahma, the creator, in the center; Vishnu, the preserver, on the right; Siva, the destroyer and reconstructor, on the left. The creator, however, has been largely lost sight of, and the other two of the triad claim the homage of the millions.

Siva, in the central and northwestern parts of India, has hosts of followers. The revolting symbol of Maha-deo, as Siva is called, is seen everywhere—by the road side, in front of temples, and even in the houses of his worshipers. This symbol, the *Ling,* or *Linga,* is thought by some scholars to be mystical in meaning and to hold none of the sensual idea; but to one who has lived in India for a long time and become intimate with some of the ruling ideas, the worship of the *Yoni* and *Linga* explains much of the impurity of life prevailing in the land of Maha-deo.

In the whole valley of the Ganges this worship prevails, as the Ganges itself is supposed to flow from Siva's body as excretory matter. The Vishnuites, or Vaishnumites, as they are called, not to be outdone, try to attribute the source of the mighty Ganges to their god, and say it flows from his feet. Many quite as incredible and ridiculous stories are told of

*The Elephanta cave temple was excavated twelve centuries ago. It is now visited by thousands of tourists.

Digitized by Google

these and other gods and goddesses. Vishnu is worshiped mostly in his incarnated forms of Krishna and Rama, but he himself has a distinct personality as preserver and has hosts of devotees and a thousand names and epithets. In many cases their temples stand side by side, as at Kanjivaram, near Madras. These two principal gods are Brahminical deities and, according to most scholars, believed to be derived from the Vedas, although some attribute to them a pre-Aryan or non-Aryan origin.

Five principal divisions of Hinduism are usually given, but they could all be considered under the two great sects of Saivism and Vaishnavism. The five given are (1) worshipers of Siva (Saivas), (2) worshipers of Vishnu (Vaishnavas), (3) worshipers of female deities, such as the numerous wives of Siva and wives of other gods (Säktas), (4) worshipers of Ganesha, the elephant-headed god of luck and good fortune (Gana-patyas), (5) sun-worshipers (Sauras). A sixth is sometimes given—Pasupata or Kapalika, which is chiefly found in South India.

The contemplative Hindu, studying the forces of nature, noticed creation, preservation, destruction and then reconstruction. He conceived of an eternal essence, or the "Absolute," manifesting itself in these processes; thus it became divided into many personalities. The sun, showering blessings upon the earth, became an object of worship. The productive earth shared in the homage and, in like manner, whatever gave benefit was deified; so that the cow, the fruitful womb, the running streams, a man's implements in agriculture and the arts—all in turn became

Digitized by Google

either deities or manifestations of them. In this way religion, while recognizing a first cause, in practice became pantheistic. The gods were endowed with the known attributes of human beings, and, being gods, these attributes were magnified. In turn the worship of these beings emphasized the same traits in the worshipers. So, in his search after God, and having no revelation of real purity, or having departed from that of his ancestors, the Hindu has fled from himself to a man-made god, and, copying its exaggerated traits, has grown no nearer righteousness, but has sunk and is sinking, supported only by borrowed ideas of holiness taken from the religions founded on revelation. At the close of this chapter more of the *results* of this system on individual and national life will be noticed.

All the gods are not worshiped alike in all parts of India. Each one holds sway in certain localities and among certain classes and sects, although many people worship a large number. The whole religion of ninety percent of the people of India is one of fear only. The elevation attained by a nation which worships what is pure and holy is lacking; for, though good spirits are believed to exist, yet they receive very little attention, because, if good, they will do no harm, therefore they need not be worshiped, while the bad must be propitiated lest they wreak vengeance upon the neglectful.

Ganesha and Su-brahmanya are favorite tutelary gods and they are asked for positive blessings, while Ayenar, a very popular god in South India, and but little known elsewhere, is only invoked to ward off

Digitized by Google

danger or disease. He is supposed to hold sway over demons and fiends who lie in wait to devastate fields and blight cattle. Offerings of the blood of goats, swine, sheep, cocks and other animals are made to him and also eatables. His priests are very poor and are said to be of the lowest caste. This latter statement is quite probable, considering the manifold inconsistencies of which Hinduism is capable. Ayenar and his two wives ride on horses over the fields, chasing away demons and spirits. This god is credited with a horrible origin, as the son of Siva and Vishnu, when Vishnu took the form of a beautiful woman. In Calcutta, Kali, the goddess who delights in the blood of goats and buffaloes, is a favorite deity, and a more loathsome creature than she is represented it were difficult to imagine. As Durga, this same goddess slew a demon by that name, and the festival in her honor in Bengal is greatly honored. In another form, Parwati, she is the popular god at Poona, where she is called the goddess of fortune. At Madura, in South India, she has many followers. In front of her shrine there living parrots and cockatoos are hung in cages.

Krishna is a favorite god in many parts of India, but his followers are generally very immoral. This is not to be wondered at, when the impure life attributed to the god is remembered. The very formula used in his worship, *"Radha Krishna,"* tells this story, for Radha was the wife of a cowherd and Lakshmi the lawful wife of Krishna; also his silly and immoral antics with the *gopis,* or milkmaids. About one-sixth of the natives of Bengal are his followers. Hanuman is a tutelary god in the Decca and in Central and

Digitized by Google

Northern India. At one time Ravana carried away Rama's beautiful wife, Sita, to Ceylon, from whence she was rescued by Hanuman. This caused his deification. This exploit is celebrated in the Hindu poem Ramayana. He was probably a real aboriginal chief, resembling an ape, and for his prowess in battle became celebrated. The tales about him came to be legends and were finally embodied in the poem mentioned. His image is generally very rough and smeared with red paint and the offerings are largely fine oil. As some claim him to be one of Siva's numerous sons, the symbol *Linga* is often seen in his temples. These symbols are constantly met with and there are at least thirty million of them in India. In Poona I saw a large image of this god under a banyan tree. In Benares there are not only images and temples, but real monkeys are sheltered and worshiped in many temples. These poor, disgusting, impudent creatures are fed by devotees.

To anyone believing in the philosophical beauty of Hinduism, one visit to sacred Benares is quite sufficient to disillusionize his mind. And so of Hinduism in general, for while mystical meanings may be attached by Pundits to many practices, as they are to the symbol of Siva, already mentioned, yet in its practical results among a people "wholly given over to idolatry" there is only corruption and decay. The few beautiful texts found in the sacred Veda are not generally known, and even in the Vedas themselves are only as grains of gold dust in heaps of débris. A few, an almost infinitesimal few, by austerities and prayers are really

Digitized by Google

seeking freedom from sin; but the masses of both high and low do not realize the disintegrating and decaying action of sin on the soul. Most are trying to propitiate the evil spirits or bribe the better ones to grant temporal blessings. While in theory professing to believe all desire is sin, even the desire for food, or for knowledge, yet in practice they are scheming for the least vestige of gain. With nothing before him but eight million or more of re-births, is it to be wondered at that the Hindu is despondent and unambitious, yet grasping? What but moral decay prompts infant marriages? Are they not born of the thought that profligacy is rampant and a virgin wife only possible when secured as an infant? Caste, too, is the legitimate outcome of a religion which is powerless to transform the life. Having no restraining power like that of a spiritual religion, and no teaching as to the brotherhood of man and the fatherhood of God, their conduct is regulated by the iron rule of caste, attention being paid to minor details while the weightier matter of morals has been neglected. All must admit that caste, in some particulars, has been a restraint; but the restraint relates chiefly to eating food, eating with other castes, marriage and occupation, while real morals are ignored. Whatever obedience a man pays to caste rules, or whatever almsgiving or feeding of animals he may perform, he counts as so much accumulated merit and, through and through the Hindu religion or religions the principle of self-righteousness is apparent. A man works out his own salvation. There is no power recognized that can cleanse from sin; no great, inspiring life to

Digitized by Google

move as an example among men. Krishna is sometimes likened to Christ, but his immoral life can have no elevating influence whatever on his devotees. Even the religious devotees who devote their entire time to austerities and devotions are anything but the sort of men to help any people to righteousness or honor. These men are called fakirs, or *sadhus*, and are taught by religion to mortify the flesh. This is done by disfiguring their bodies and living in nakedness and filth, counting this uncleanness of body cleanness of soul. Their hair remains uncut and uncombed, and often their bodies are smeared with ashes of cow-manure, while streaks of paint add to the hideous appearance.

They wander from place to place and are greatly reverenced by the people, who accede to their demands for gifts, and consider them a class of holy men. Even proud Brahmins bow down to these grimy creatures. Self-torture of every description is inflicted on their bodies. Some hold their hands or feet in one position until fixed there and impossible to be moved. Others fasten their eyes upon a certain object for days or months. A still more silly performance is to move one finger up and down continuously during waking hours. Many of these men measure the ground with their bodies until they reach the sacred Benares; but, no doubt, when arrived there they join the evil throng which crowds the temples and shares in the religious (?) revels sanctioned there. There is evil in every land, but it is not connected with worship in any but idolatrous countries. The pride of the Romans did not keep the evils of sensuality even from the temples of the vestal (?) virgins; nor did the Egyptians fail

Digitized by Google

to fall into religious uncleanness in the majestic temples of Isis. Exquisite Greece, in the midst of her refined, alluring and ornate gods and goddesses and glorious temples, crowning the marvelous Acropolis, fell into softness, effeminacy and final decay. No amount of culture, beauty and magnificence can preserve a nation or an individual who once loses the perfect ideal, the really divine, the vital touch of God. Then what of dark India, where every so-called divinity is more or less a villain and the semblances worshiped are themselves shapes of deformity, and where only the ancient temples, with their splendid carvings, seem to furnish any adequate background for the old mysticism of the Vedas? There the imaginary Mahatmas, inhabiting the snows of the Himalayas, and the wonder-working Sadhus, all vanish, and in their places one sees gross materialism of a sort unknown elsewhere. Where will you find the religious sanction of greed, bribery, theft and licentiousness, but in the shadow of the temples of Siva and Vishnu? Where, as in Brindaban, will you find six thousand temple-prostitutes? Where a little building, like the one at Pandrapur, which my husband saw, for the purpose of receiving illegitimate children, who are the result of the orgies practiced at this place in connection with the great religious festivals held there?

At the great *melas,* or festivals, held at various places besides those mentioned—Burman on the Narbudda, at Benares, Puri, Jagan-nath and elsewhere—there are many objectionable and disgusting practices and ceremonies, as noticed in other chapters. The

Digitized by Google

whole tendency is toward grossness and vulgarity. The very songs about the gods are obscene. The great attraction at many of these places is the *Jatra*, or religious drama. This, too, can only be bad in influence, as the characters represented are corrupt, with nothing in the drama to indicate that this evil is deprecated. Besides the Jatra, there is usually a *nautch*, or dance, by the poor abandoned women who follow this profession.

All tends to corruption and materialism. Only outward rites, the invention of priestcraft, remain, with selfishness and superstition, without love, purity or holiness. The true "Light of Asia" is the Asiatic Nazarene, who will come to his own and give them light.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIX.

PILGRIMAGES AND HOLY PLACES.

All over India you hear constantly of *Tirth,* Hindu pilgrimage; or *Hajiya,* Mohammedan pilgrimage; or a pilgrimage of the Parsees to the burning lakes, somewhere on the Caspian Sea, where they believe the god of fire has his home. There is also the pilgrimage of the Buddhist to Buddha's birthplace, besides almost innumerable minor shrines and sacred rivers, sacred trees, as the old stump of a banyan in the underground passage of the fort at Allahabad; old temples and special places dedicated to special gods, as Mutra, for those who especially revere Krishna. Tanjore, Madura and Tinnevelly receive the greatest throngs of Siva worshipers, and so on through the endless list of gods and goddesses, each having a special shrine, or city, to which long and fatiguing pilgrimages are made by devout Hindus, Parsees or Mohammedans. Southern India is the place where the greatest honor is paid to Siva. At the three cities mentioned, Tanjore, Madura and Tinnevelly, are to be found the finest temples in point of grandeur and size that have been erected to the worship of this god. Travelers consider the one at Tanjore as the first. It is inside an immense quadrangle, surrounded by a double row of cells, or cloisters, for the priests and "holy men." Midway on two sides of the enclosure are arranged one

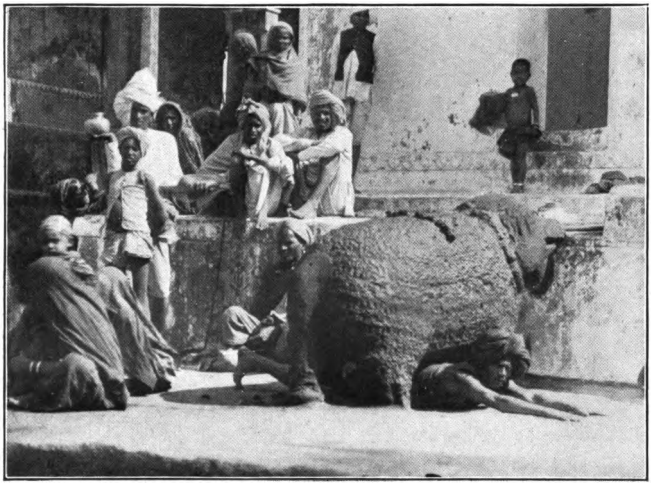
Digitized by Google

hundred and eight black stone Lingas of different sizes, one for each of the principal names of Siva. Behind these are grotesque frescoes on the wall. This image, the *Linga,* is used in all temples devoted to Siva or "Maha-deva," or "Maha-deo"—*Maha* meaning "great," and *deva,* or *deo,* "god." This symbol represents the male generative organs, or, more frequently, those of both sexes. Inside the quadrangle there is a little grove of palm and other trees, and in the principal temple an innermost sanctuary of the sacred Linga. Strangers are not allowed to approach the temples in South India. In Benares, however, where such throngs of tourists resort, you may go very near even the most sacred spot. Outside this great temple at Tanjore is a gigantic statue of Siva's bull. This image is in an open hall of fine architecture.

Besides the Linga there are many images of other gods and goddesses in side temples, besides gods and their exploits pictured on the walls. This is one of the one thousand and eight temples of Siva to be found in India, besides thousands of shrines dedicated to him. To all these pilgrims come to worship, as will presently be described. In connection with the Benares temples Kali's temples are equally numerous. Kali is the dark, blood-thirsty wife of Siva. Durga is another manifestation of this wife, Parwati* another, and so on. At Madura, Minakshi, the wife of Siva, is really the popular deity of the district, according to great authorities on Indian deities. The festi-

*One of the principal temples of Parwati is at Poona. (Chap. IV.)

Digitized by Google



STONE HOG AT BARMON ON THE NARBUDDA RIVER.
See Chap. XVI.

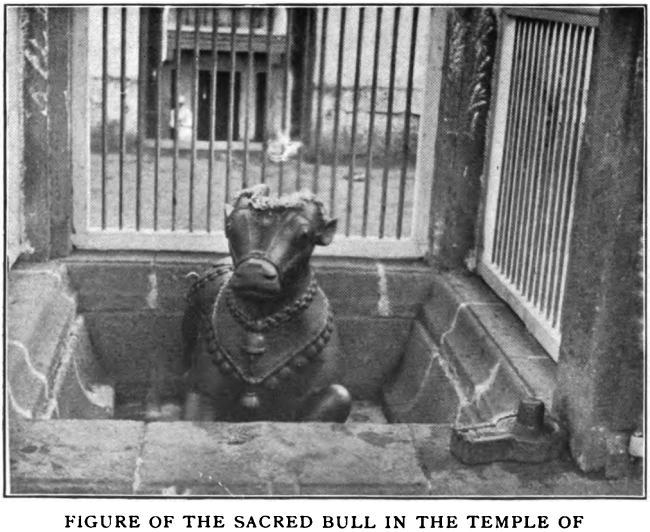


FIGURE OF THE SACRED BULL IN THE TEMPLE OF PARWATI, POONA.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

vals held in her honor are coarse and debasing, and are called "oil-festivals." The idol is undressed, its head anointed with oil, redressed and decorated amid an incessant noise of shouting, singing, the beating of tom-toms and other deafening instruments. Lights are waved, cowries are thrown, while the procession, headed by the god Ganesha, moves along. Whatever the admirers of Hinduism may say about the theoretic beauties of this ancient and conglomerate religion, yet to a dweller in India it is plain that grossness and sensuality, combined with much inert fatalism, control the masses.

The temple of Ramesvara,* situated on an island nearly connecting India with Ceylon, is counted as second in sanctity to Benares. To first journey through Benares, go through more than a hundred ceremonies, pay large fees to the Brahmins, pour plenty of Ganges water on the Linga in the temples there, bathe in the Ganges and then take a jar of water to Ramesvara, toiling on foot, through sand and dust, for twelve hundred miles, will insure perfection of bliss in the life to come for ages and ages.

A traveler gives a touching incident which occurred at this place just before his arrival there: A father and son had, after months of suffering and hard travel, succeeded in reaching the other side of the channel and the temple was actually in sight, when the father died suddenly on the road, leaving the little

*For information regarding the great temples in South India, I am indebted to Sir Monier Williams and his book "Brahminism and Hinduism."

Digitized by Google

boy destitute. He had, however, his precious jar of water. With this he hurried on to the shrine. Not knowing how precious his burden was, the presiding priest closed the door in the child's face, because the little fellow had no fee to give him. The boy's outburst of grief was terrible. Ruled by the priests with a rod of iron, they find no love, no care, no sympathy in the caste and the ceremonies they so blindly worship.

The Siva temples have many legends connected with trees. In some places the mango tree, while in other places the vata tree, the jambu tree and others are woven into the stories about Siva. Serpent-worship is also connected with this god. At Jagan-nath—the great temple at Puri, in Orissa—one hundred thousand annually eat the sacred food which is distributed in the courts of the temple, for here caste is discarded for the time.

The rock-hewn temples at Ellora, or Ellora Caves, one of the wonders of the world, are considered very holy as well as ancient.

Leaving Siva temples and shrines we may notice a few of the other gods and goddesses and their shrines. At Gaya there is a large Vishnu temple where *sraddhas,* or prayers for the dead, are performed. These sraddhas may be made on the banks of pools, or streams—places consecrated by the footprints of Vishnu, as this temple at Gaya—or they may be offered in cowhouses. *Pindas* (balls of rice) and milk are placed with leaves of the tulsi plant in earthenware platters, then sprinkled over with flowers and kusa grass. The hands of the performers are

Digitized by Google

purified by holding kusa grass. Water is then poured into the palms and this is scattered over the pindas and the ground; threads from the clothes are added to typify presenting garments to the dead. Prayers and texts by the priests accompany all this. Finally, bowing the head to the feet of the Brahmin, the ceremony concludes with, of course, a fee to his highness the priest. Thousands flock to Trichinopoly, the wonderful sacred city inclosed in an inner and outer, with five middle walls. This contains jeweled images, many-storied towers rivaling the great rock of Trichinopoly in height, gateways and innumerable columns, and has cost millions of rupees and required years for building. Thousands of the priests make their living from the pilgrims. In the inner wall, leading to the most sacred shrine, is a door called "Heaven's Gate." The idol is carried inside, bedecked and ready to receive the gifts of the throngs. Amid deafening noises the crowd passes through Heaven's Gate. Do you see them? Some go from a vague sense of duty, some because their forefathers have done the same from time immemorial, but the most, doubtless, carrying the conviction that the passage of this earthly heaven's gate, opened by the priests at their bidding, will be a sure passport to Vishnu's heaven after death.

At all these temples there are troops of dancing-girls, married to the god, but really slaves to the licentious desires of the Brahmins, who belong to the temples or who visit there. The visions of the most enthusiastic theosophist, worshiper of Mahatmas, or ideal admirer of Hindu mysticism, would fade away before the awful realities witnessed in these holy places, these

Digitized by Google

temples, shrines and ghäts on the sacred rivers. Thousands of helpless widows are gathered at Brindaban in North India, and girls are married to the god Khandoka in Western India and forced to live profligate lives.

A description of one day in Benares is quite sufficient for a lover of the pure and beautiful.

BENARES, THE MECCA OF HINDUISM.

Even after a residence of more than seven years in India, and with many experiences in different cities, Benares is a revelation of the possibilities of Hinduism.

The city lies on the banks of the magnificent Ganges. Facing the river is a perfect forest of temples, towers, bathing-ghäts, and palaces. The varicolored stone of which they are built, the swarms of people in their many tinted garments, the booths, the boats, the clear reflection of all in the beautiful river, make a truly gorgeous scene of oriental life.

Titular kings and queens and a few real ones, from all parts of India, come here. Each one erects a temple to his or her favorite god or goddess, and also a palace, or mansion, in which to dwell during their sojourn in the sacred city. Here, too, they expect to come in their last days, to die on the banks of the great Ganges. Happy the man who dies in Benares, having his feet washed by the purifying stream as his soul leaves his body, then to be burned on its banks and have his ashes carried away on the bosom of the river.

Many of the palaces are mere quadrangular piles of masonry, but many are really fine buildings and

Digitized by Google

enclose beautiful gardens. Near each palace is the temple built by the same devotee. The architecture is curious, ornate and varied. Many temples are ornamented with pure gold. An elaborate, pinnated spire in different colorings was often repeated. Around the base, and along the edge of the roof, numbers of small spires start out, first as bas-relief and then taper off into graceful, separate spires, while again the bas-relief would begin behind this row, and in turn taper off, and so on until the spire in the very center shoots up its graceful form, surrounded by symmetrical, alternate rows of spires, each row lower than the one nearer the center, down to the roof of the temple. Two of these spires, one in white and gold, the other in dull-green and brick-red, with gold lines, were very pleasing to the eye.

In the city there is a double temple, whose exterior resembles that of a mosque. The domes are overlaid with thin plates of pure gold. Its interior is filled with almost innumerable idols—images of Gunpat, Parwati, the sacred bull, Siva, and the indescribable Ling, and many others. The whole scene was loathsome in the extreme. Swarms of people were going in and out of the temple and up and down the narrow alleys leading to the temple. Each one going in was carrying a plate filled with flowers, rice and little cups of oil and water, which form the offerings to the idols. Stalls of flower-sellers, oil and grain venders block the roads on either side. The water, oil and flowers which fell on the pavement were trampled into a slimy paste. As most of the flowers were marigolds, the odor was sickening. The temples in the crowded city, the idols, the deluded,

Digitized by Google

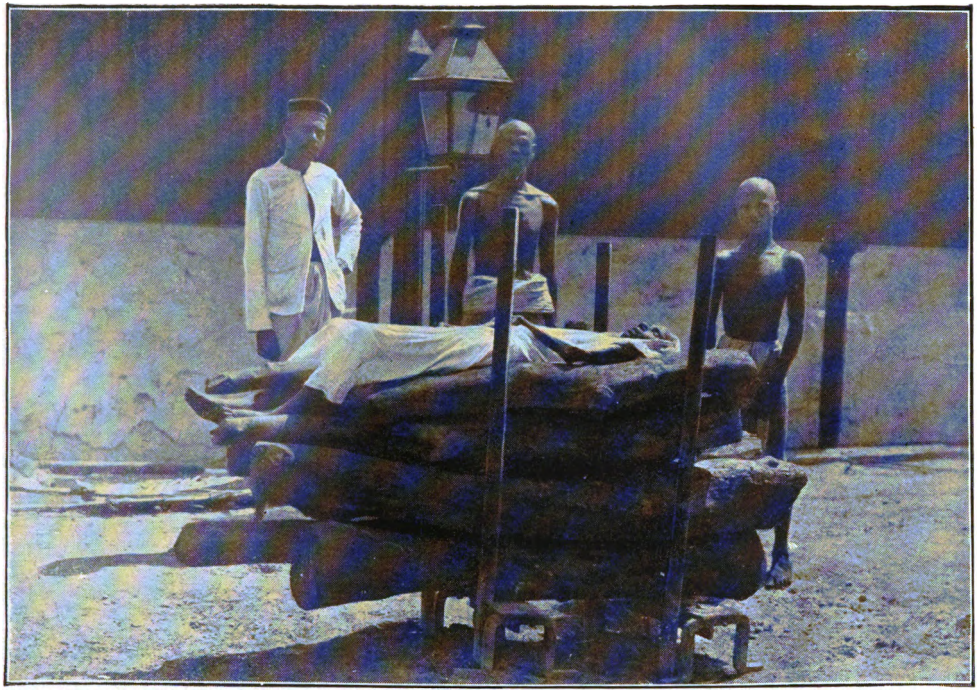
worshiping throngs, and, above all, the scenes along the river's edge, all proclaim superstition, impurity, vileness—a people given over to uncleanness and all abominations.

We spent the most of our time in a boat going up and down the two miles of river front. The numerous ghäts are long flights of wide stone steps reaching down below the water's edge. All day long, and most of the night, these great steps are literally covered with throngs of people, all eager to wash away their sins by a plunge into Mother Ganges. As one after another comes down into the river, they lift their folded or outstretched hands, and, looking toward the far horizon, they breathe a prayer to the god of the waters. Some throw handfuls of water over their heads as they repeat their *mantras*, or prayers. The thought comes to us that this worship and these throngs have been repeated for hundreds, even thousands of years.

"Oh! those generations old,
Over whom no church-bell tolled!
Sightless, lifting up blind eyes
To the silence of the skies!
For the innumerable dead
Is my soul disquieted."

One of the ghäts is called the burning-ghät. Sitting in the boat we watched three or four bodies prepared for Hindu cremation. Whatever the rite of cremation may be elsewhere, here it partakes only of the repulsive. The bodies are brought on bamboo stretchers and are placed just inside the edge of the stream while the pyre is being made ready. This is

Digitized by Google



BURNING THE DEAD.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

one of the places where suttee used to be performed before English law put a stop to the cruel practice. One corpse was that of a man of about forty years of age. His widow, in the white garments of widowhood, came down to the water's edge, and, dipping up some of the blessed Ganges, poured it over the face of the dead. When the body was lifted on to the pyre she helped to pile wood over it and it was her hand that applied the torch. When the sickening crackling began, and at a gesture from a relative—perhaps a command, for we were not near enough to hear—she picked up a stone, and, putting her hands alternately on the ground, she broke off the pretty glass bangles from her wrists and walked up the bank, a desolate widow, done with pleasures, ornaments and even respect, perhaps to endure treatment which will make her wish for the olden, sharper, but speedier death by suttee.

The dust of the burnings is strewn upon the beautiful stream, whose origin, according to Hindu mythology, is too revolting to mention. In the burnings much of the body is not reduced to ashes, owing to the very primitive arrangements. Near one of the pyres we saw a gaunt pariah dog gnawing away on the remains of a previous burning, and, on looking closely, we saw that his booty was a human skull. This, my first view of a burning-ghät, I hope may be my last.

Many strange and pathetic scenes were transpiring on all sides. The fakirs, or holy men, were to be seen everywhere—some at prayers, some in meditation and some bathing. A Brahmin priest was leading a young woman into the water. We were told that he was

Digitized by Google

giving her the holy bath. He dipped her up and down, mumbling incantations all the while. She placed the edge of his robe on her head at intervals, and the sad sight suggested temple-practices such as Pundita Ramabai tells us go on in this great city of Hinduism and elsewhere in India.

While we were still in the boat, an old ascetic died. We heard that he was to be immediately lowered into the river instead of being burned. This is a privilege of this class of men if they so desire. They tied large earthen pots to his arms and feet; then, rowing out into the stream a little way, while they blew an unearthly blast on a conch-shell, the disciples of the old devotee, laughing and chatting with apparent unconcern, tumbled the skeleton-like form overboard, and, turning the *chatties* so that they filled with water, the remains were soon out of sight beneath the flood.

In a garden near the monkey-temple we saw an old man—Shri Swami Bharkaranand Sarasvati by name—who is supposed by reason of his austerities to have attained to the state of deity. As we entered the garden in the chill of the early January morning we perceived the thin old man, on an upper veranda, in a state of nudity. He hastily donned a half yard of clothing—his robe of state, as it were, for he only puts it on for the reception of visitors—and came down the rose-bordered walk to meet us. To our surprise he took our hands in a friendly grasp. Then he presented us with a little book containing a short sketch of his life and the names of a long list of noted and unnoted foreign visitors who have come to see him.

Digitized by Google

He inquired all about us—our work, residence, and so on; then, bidding us to be sure to see his own marble image in a shrine on the other side of the garden, he smiled, salaamed and departed. *He did not ask us for bakshish,* and for that reason, if no other, we shall never forget Shri Swami, the holy man of Benares. We saw the life-size statue, done most exquisitely in pure white, glossy marble, with the eyes painted to exactly simulate life. People from far and near come to bow down and worship this saint's image.

We have seen Benares! To some extent we can comprehend the first clause in Isa. 57:5, and we can realize the necessity for some of the awful punishments meted out to idolaters in Bible times. We can give but a glimpse of Hinduism, with its multitudinous gods and its evil effects on mind, heart and body of man. The worst we see we dare not write, and we can never know the worst as it really exists. But in spite of all this dark picture, India is rising from the slough of superstition, for her light has come. Thousands of her idols have been crushed, and even into dark Benares the beneficent rays are piercing. Some day, not very distant, the ashes of the idols in this city shall strew the beauteous river, her inhabitants shall drink of the fountain of life and bathe, for cleansing, in the river of the water of life which proceedeth out of the throne of God and the Lamb.

There are many sacred spots on the banks of the rivers Narbudda and Jumna, besides Benares and other places on the Ganges, and even on smaller rivers, while sacred tanks are common. At Pushkar there is

Digitized by Google

a tank where sins are supposed to be cleansed away. At Allahabad there is held a great mela, or religious festival, at the junction of the Ganges and the Jumna. Here thousands of pilgrims resort every year. On the Narbudda, at Burman, a similar *mela* is held. This one is described in the chapter on "Up-country Scenes."

Another notable gathering is at Kumbaconam in South India, where, in a tank, "Mother Ganges" is supposed to appear from a subterranean passage once in twelve years. Several hundred thousand people congregate at this place at the time when the sacred waters appear. The priest stands in an elevated structure. The teeming thousands stand in the water, with hands outstretched or uplifted in prayer, waiting the signal of the priest to indicate that the Ganges has come. Then, with chants and prayers, the multitude plunges into the efficacious waters.

Could there be a sadder sight? Yes, a sadder one is the throng of returning, impoverished pilgrims—nothing wiser, nothing better, much poorer, but carrying away, as they will tell you, no joy, no peace, no sense of pardon. The great pilgrimage is over and no comfort has come to the soul, no new inspiration into the life. They have asked for bread, but a stone has been given them and they are starving still. They have looked for cleansing, but no sin has left them. They have looked for power, but none has come. They have bowed before hideous images, have recited texts and prayers, performed vigils and listened to stories of the gods—all in vain! With corrupt imag-

Digitized by Google

inations and perverted consciences, with foot-sore and aching bodies, they return as they came—unhelped.

Pilgrimages and holy places are not sufficiently noticed without a reference to the religious mendicants, the "holy men," or fakirs of India. Some admirers of Brahminism describe these men as ascetics who have renounced the world, the flesh and the devil and who give themselves up to the contemplation of God and spiritual matters. You have only to see these men to be satisfied that theirs is a kind of "holiness" that would not be tolerated in Christian lands. They travel from place to place, sometimes in bands of fifty or more, but more often singly. They beg or demand their living from the people, before whom they pose as devout men. They go nearly or quite naked, disfiguring their bodies with paint or ashes, and refrain from bathing, until, in that hot climate, their stench might announce their presence in the dark. Their hair is never cut, washed or combed, but is woven in a filthy basket-like mat about their heads, or hangs in stringy masses about their shoulders. Nearly all carry the dried outside cocoanut shell as a receptacle for gifts and alms. Their whole appearance is revolting and their minds and morals are as unclean as their bodies. These are the teachers in Hinduism and the same class abounds among Mohammedans.

Poor India!—seventy-three per cent of its people following after idols and are led by ignorant priests and disgusting sadhus, and the remaining twenty-three per cent submit to the sensual and treacherous teachings of the "false prophet" and his devotees, the fakirs! No living fountain of life from which to

Digitized by Google

quench her thirst; only the murky streams from the Vedas and Koran. When shall she be led into the beams from the Sun of Righteousness? Some day, neither at Benares nor at Mecca, but at a spiritual shrine of a spiritual God, shall all of India's wealth of devotion and self-sacrifice be poured. Old temples are crumbling, ancient faiths and superstitions fading away, and idols are being destroyed. Fairer than the dream-like Täj Mahal shall India's beauty shine forth, for in that day ashes and corruption shall give place to righteousness, purity and peace.

Dark India! stretching out helpless hands to those more favored.

Christless, lifting up blind eyes
To the silence of the skies!
Still thy love, oh! Christ arisen,
Yearns to save these souls in prison
Through all depths of sin and loss
Drops the plummet of thy cross!
Never yet abyss was found
Deeper than that cross can sound.

Digitized by Google

INDEX.

Ablutions, 126.
Age of consent, 149.
  Memorial concerning, 150.
Agra, 216.
Akbar, 209.
  Iron pillar of, 216.
American grain, 176.
Animals, 116.
  Cruelty to, 250.
  Hospital for, 248.
  Sacred Bull, 284.
  Stone Hog, 255, 284.
Apollo Bunder, 13.
Aryans, 225.
  Invasion of, 27.
Asoka, 208.

Baroda, 219.
Bathings, 126.
Benares, 67, 293.
Benevolence, 48.
Betel leaves, 127.
Bombay, 13.
Brahma, 274.
Brahmin, 48, 63, 71.
  Claims of, 238.
  Punishments of, 238.
Buffalo, 16.
Bull, sacred, 284.
Bungalow, 65.
Burman, 122.
Burning ghāts, 24.

Carey, Wm., 262.
Caste, 36, 48, 222.
  Defenders of, 232.
  Evils of, 231, 234.
  Low Caste, 44, 159.
  Ostracism from, 233.
  Origin of, 224.
  Peculiarities of, 243.
  Sub-divisions of, 226.
Charpoy, 162.
Cholera, 171.
Christians, kinds of, 45.
  Lapses, 55.
Chundra Leela, 50, 54.
Civil Service, 35.
Cleanliness, 133.
Climate, Varieties of, 37.
Collector, 33.
Colleges—
  Allahabad, 264.
  Bombay, 264.
  Calcutta, 264.
  Elphinstone, 13.
  Lahore, 264.
  Madras, 264.
Congress, The Social, 150.
Cook house, 114.
Coolie, 14.
  Women, 165.
Cremation, 290.

Darjeeling, 195.
Dead, Disposition of—
  (1) Parsee Method, 21.
  (2) Hindu Method, 24, 290.
Delhi, 208.
Diwān i Khāss, 210.
Doctors, 18, 34.
  Mrs. Stephens, 77, 155.
  Miss Clara Swain, 151.
  Miss Bielby, 151.
  Mrs. Monelle Mansell, 150.
Dufferin, Countess of, 151.
Durga, 284.

East India Company, 29.
Eating, Manner of, 65.
Education—
  Founding of, 262.
  Government, 264.
  Of Women, 162.
  Girls' schools, 269.
  Higher, 269.
  Missionaries in, 263.
Ekkā, 15.
English, The Rule of, 28, 30.
Eurasians, 27.

Digitized by Google

INDEX.

Fairs, 122, 281.
Fakirs, 125, 280, 295.
Famine, 57, 167.
  Relief of, 168, 172.
  In Zananas, 175.
Fire Worship, 21.
Fruit, 113.

Ganges, 291.
Gods, 66.
  Siva, 274.
  Vishnu, 274.
  Kälī, 277.
  Krishna, 277.
  Offerings to, 289.
  Symbols, of, 278.
Gonds, 201.
Government, 26.
  Benefits of, 41.
  Difficulties of, 36, 38.
  Errors of, 40.
  Natives in, 35.
Governor General, 32.
Governors, 32.

Hajiya, 283.
Hanumän, 278.
Hardwicke Christian Boys' School, 57.
Hill Stations, 195.
Hinduism, Divisions of, 275.
Hook swinging, 40.
Humäyan, 202.
Hyderabäd, 31.

Idols, Care of, 70.
Industries, 58.
Insects, 115.
Iron Bracelet, 146.
Iron Pillar of Asoka, 216.

Jackals, 116.
Jains, 248.
Jajannäth, 286.
Jamna Musjid, 212.
Jeypur, 221.

Käli, 277.
Karens, 46.
Karmarkar, Vishnu Bhaskar, 52.
Korän, 93.
Krishna, 277.
Kutub Minär, 209.

Languages, Diversity of, 37.
Lawyers, 40.
Lucknow, 218.

Mädurä, 283.
Mähäbleshwar, 195.
Mähätmäs, 89.
Mänü, Laws of, 139.
Märäthi, 14, 15, 63, 64.
Market, Crawford, 16.
Marriage—
  Age of Consent, 149.
  Child, 148.
  High Caste, or Brahminical, 186.
  Mixed, 147.
Mäthäs, 89.
Melä, 122, 281.
Mem Sähib, 134.
Missionaries, Social life of, 109.
  Children of, 111, 112.
  In Education, 263.
  Women Missionaries, 161.
Missions—
  Societies, 43.
  Schools, 170.
Mofussil, 108.
Moguls, 28.
Mohammedon, 28.
  Houses of, 130.
Monasteries, 89.
Mueller, Max, 224.
Muir, Dr., 224.
Mukti, 84.
Mussoorie, 195.
Mutiny, 30, 219.
Mysore, 221.

Naini Täl, 155.
Narsinghpur, 110, 57.
Native States, 31.
Nautch, 282.
Nür Jahän, 209.

Ootacamund, 195, 199.
Opium, 41.
Orphanages, 57.

Pachmarhi, 195.
Pan, 131.
Parsee, 13, 18.
Peacock Throne, 211.
People: Nationalities, 26.
Persecution, 47.
Peshwä, 63.
Pilgrimages, 283.
Pilgrims, 122.
Plague, 14, 171.

Digitized by Google

INDEX.

Polyandry, 204.
Polygamy, 154.
Poona, 63.
Powar, Ram Chandra Babaji, 49.
  Sundarabai, 141.
Presidencies, 32.
Pugrī, 13, 63.
Punkahs, 111, 112.
Purdah, 17, 64, 69, 92, 97, 129.
  Reason for, 139.

Railway: Victoria Terminus, 13.
Rajputs, 208.
Ramabai, Pandita, 20, 46, 75.
  Acceptance of Christ, 82.
  Her father, 85.
  Ramabai Circles, 87.
Reformers, 74.
  Ram Mohun Roy, 74.
Religions, Varieties of, 27, 36.
  Ceremonies of, 69.
  Fire Worship, 21.
Rivers, Sacred. Narbudda, 122.
Rowe, Phoebe, 55, 160.
Runabai, 97.
Ryder, Dr. Emma, 16.

Sabbath, Observance of, 46.
Sacred Places, 88.
  Burman, 122.
Sacrifices of Todas, 205.
Sadhus, 280.
Schools—
  Government curriculum, 61.
  Girls, 265.
  First girls' school, 65.
  Industrial, 58, 60.
  Mission schools, 170.
  Ramabai's, 20, 74.
Self-torture, 280.
Servants, 114.
Shārada Sadan, 80.
Shri Swāmī, 293.
Simla, 195.
Siva, 274.
Social Congress, 150.
Sooboo Nagam Ammal, 50.
Sorosis Club, 16.
Sūdrā, 48, 225.
  Why created, 239.
  Punishment of, 239.
Superstition, 140.
Suttee, 40, 68, 74.
Sweepers, 164.

Tahsīldār, 33.
Tāj Mahal, 210.
Temples, Parwatī, 67.
  Tanjore, 283.
  Mādurā, 283.
  Tinnevelly, 283.
  Ellora rock-hewn temples, 286.
Theosophists, 241.
Tirth, 283.
Todas, 202.
  Sacrifices of, 205.
Tongā, 161.
Towers of Silence, 21.
Trees, 117.
Trichinopoly, 287.
Tulsi plant, 130.

Uncleanliness, 133, 247.

Vegetation, 117.
Vehicles, 15.
Viceroy, 32.
Victoria Terminus, 13.
Vishnu, 274.

Weddings, 15, 65.
  A country, 180.
  Brahminical, 186.
  Mohammedan, 191.
  Planting post, 182.
  Procession, 94.
Wells, Pollution of, 53.
Widows, Burning of, 40.
  Celibacy, 76.
  Description of, 75.
  Home for, 80.
  Number of, 73.
  Rescue of, 80.
  Story of one, 101.
  Story of Runabai, 73.
  Treatment of widows, 77.
Williams, Sir Monier, 224.
Women, Education, 162.
  Lower castes, 159.
  Marriage, 156, 157.
  Medical aid for, 152.
  Social position, 156.
  Treatment of, 155.

Zahur ul Haqq, 49.
Zanana, 129, 134.
  Access to, 142.
  Famine in, 175.
  Life in, 136.
  Work in, 140, 160.

Digitized by Google

PRINTED BY R. R. DONNELLEY
AND SONS COMPANY, AT THE
LAKESIDE PRESS, CHICAGO, ILL.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

This book should be returned to the Library on or before the last date stamped below.

A fine of five cents a day is incurred by retaining it beyond the specified time.

Please return promptly.

MAY 9 1925

JAN 11 '62 H

Digitized by Google